Socialization into Conflict

~ . .

.

~ ¥ \_

· . · · ·

James L. Russell

2 \* ·

Vol - I

Presented in fulfilment of the requirements for the degree of Ph.D in the Department of Politics, University of Strathclyde

1973-74

# Table of Contents

Summary

| List of Table | as and Figures  |
|---------------|---|
| Acknowledgmer |   |
| Chapter I     | Civic Learning  |
| Chapter II    | Some Aspects of the Political History of Education<br>in Northern Ireland |
| Chapter III   | Fieldwork: Strategies and Hazards   |
| Chapter IV    | Basic Attitudes   |
| Schapter V    | School Influences   |
| Chapter VI    | Family and Social Class   |
| Chapter VII   | National Community and Religion   |
| Chapter VIII  | The Local Political Environment   |
| Chapter IX    | Youthful Associations   |
| LChapter X    | Social and Political Attitudes  |
| Chapter XI    | The Aggregate Pattern   |
| Chapter XII   | The Source of Conflict  |
| Appendix 1    | The Civic Learning Sample   |
| Appendix 2    | Weighting the Secondary School Sample                                     |
| Appendix 3    | The Civic Learning Questionnaires   |
| Appendix 4    | Children in Conflict  |

\$

.

#### Summary

The religious schools in Northern Ireland are permeated by many of the symbols, beliefs, attitudes and values of the community which they serve, to the exclusion of those of the other religion. Many questions can be put to Protestant school boys which would be unrealistic if asked in Catholic schools and <u>vice versa</u>. The fault lines of the political system in Northern Ireland run deeply into the rising generation. What is responsible for such division?

After a brief review of the literature and methods of studying political socialization among children and young people, this thesis reviews the political history of education in Northern Ireland and raises some of the educational issues which have divided the adult population of Ulster.

The central part of the thesis is concerned with the analysis of replies given by 3,000 Ulster schoolboys to questions about politics and society asked during a time of disorder. In particular, attitudes to Government and discord are examined in the light of school, social, religious, and national structures and beliefs, and are discussed in the context of divisive educational issues.

The aggregate pattern of influences upon schoolboys' political attitudes is assessed towards the end of the thesis with regard to the relative importance of school and community influences upon political learning. Finally, the relevance of survey findings for the future of educational and political life in Northern Ireland is assessed. List of Tables and Figures

|            |   | Chapter | Page |
|------------|---|---------|------|
| TABLE II:1 | Primary and Secondary schools and<br>pupils by management type - January<br>1971  | II      | 24   |
| TABLE IV:1 | Ability to assign those who work for<br>Government to the Public Sector of<br>Life. Primary boys.   | IV      | 2    |
| TABLE IV:2 | Perceptions of Government   | IV      | 4    |
| TABLE IV:3 | Affect towards Government   | IV      | 11   |
| TABLE IV:4 | Attitudes to Discord  | IV      | 34   |
| TABLE IV:5 | Affect to Government by Discord<br>Attitudes  | IV      | 38   |
| TABLE V:1  | Main content of History Course as seen<br>by Teacher  | v       | 14   |
| TABLE V:2  | Comparisons of two views of History<br>Lessons and Historical Interests   | v       | 16   |
| TABLE V:3  | Percentage having Negative Affect towar<br>Government among Secondary School<br>Catholics by School Type and History                        |         | 19   |
| TABLE:V:3a | Interest in History and Discord   | v       | 23   |
| TABLE V:4  | Political Discord and Irish Language  | v       | 26   |
| TABLE V:5  | Levels of Respect towards Teachers and<br>Government  | v       | 29   |
| TABLE V:6  | Respect for Teacher and Political<br>Discord  | V       | 31   |
| TABLE V:7  | Attitudes to Discord in Catholic Inter-<br>mediate Schools and Streaming  | V       | 37   |
| TABLE V:8  | Affect to Government and Intelligence   | v       | 40   |
| TABLE V:9  | Political Discord and Intelligence  | V       | 41   |
| TABLE V:10 | Attitudes to Discord among Catholic boy<br>in the Working Class compared to<br>those of Working Class boys in Mixed<br>Social Class Schools |         | 44   |

٠

| TABLE V:11School Year and Affect to Govern-<br>ment   | v   | 48          |
|---|-----|-------------|
| TABLE V:12 School Year and Discord  | V   | 50          |
| TABLE V:13Educational Aspirations and Positive<br>Affect to Government  | V · | 52          |
| TABLE V:14 Educational Aspirations and Disorder   | v   | 53          |
| TABLE VI:1Order of Frequency of Choice of Prime<br>Minister and Father Characteristics                            | VI  | 9           |
| TABLE VI:2Prime Minister and Father Characteris-<br>tics combined   | VI  | 10          |
| TABLE VI:3 Importance of doing whatever Parents<br>and Government says  | VI  | 14          |
| TABLE VI:4Respect for Parents and Affect for<br>Government  | VI  | 16          |
| TABLE VI:5Perception of Family's Political<br>Influence and Affect to Government                                  | VI  | 23          |
| TABLE VI:6 Socio-Economic Group and Social Class  | VI  | 29          |
| TABLE VI:7 Social Class and Affect to Government  | VI  | 32          |
| TABLE VI:8 Social Class and Discord   | VI  | 33          |
| TABLE VII:1 National Identities   | VII | 6           |
| TABLE VII:2 National Identities and Discord   | VII | 6           |
| TABLE VII:3 Strength of National Identity and<br>Discord  | VII | 8           |
| TABLE VII:4Feelings towards People in England and<br>Discord  | VII | 14          |
| TABLE VII:5 Feelings towards People in Eire and<br>Discord  | VII | 14          |
| TABLE VII:6 Feelings towards Children/Young People<br>in the other Religion in Ulster and<br>Discord              | VII | 14a         |
| TABLE VII:7 Feelings towards Children/Young People<br>in the other Religion in Ulster and<br>Affect to Government | VII | 14 <b>a</b> |

,

|              |  | Chapter | Page |
|--------------|--|---------|------|
| TABLE VII:8  | Strength of Religious Identification   | VII     | 29   |
| TABLE VII:9  | Strength of Religious Identification<br>and Discord                                      | VII     | 30   |
| TABLE VII:10 | Friendship across Religious Lines and<br>Discord   | VII     | 34   |
| TABLE VII:11 | Friendship across Religious Lines amon<br>Catholics and Affect to Government             | YII     | 35   |
| TABLE VII:12 | Perceived Hostility of Other Religion  | VII     | 38   |
| TABLE VII:13 | Perceptions of Religious Discrimina-<br>tion   | VII     | 40   |
| TABLE VIII:1 | Belfast and Beyond and Discord   | VIII    | 4    |
| TABLE VIII:2 | Gross Population and Discord   | VIII    | 7    |
| TABLE VIII:3 | East and West of the River Bann and Discord  | VIII    | 10   |
| TABLE VIII:4 | Religious Proportions and Affect to<br>Government  | VIII    | 17   |
| TABLE VIII:5 | Religious Proportions and Discord  | VIII    | 18   |
| TABLE VIII:6 | Disorder Levels and Discord  | VIII    | 23   |
| TABLE VIII:7 | Subjective View of Disorder Level and<br>Affect to Government                            | VIII    | 26   |
| TABLE VIII:8 | Subjective View of Disorder Level and<br>Discord   | VIII    | 27   |
| TABLE IX:1   | Friendship Groups and Discord  | IX      | 5    |
| TABLE IX:2   | Friendship Group by Belfast/Beyond<br>Belfast and Discord                                | IX      | 7    |
| TABLE IX:3   | Friendship Groups by Social Class and<br>Discord   | IX      | 8    |
| TABLE IX:4   | Difference between Leaders of Groups<br>and Outsiders regarding Vandalism<br>and Rioting | IX      | 10   |
| TABLE IX:5   | Friendship Groups and Attitudes to<br>Riots  | IX      | 10   |

|             |   | Chapter     | Page |
|-------------|---|-------------|------|
| TABLE IX:6  | The Junior Orange Association and Discord   | IX          | 14   |
| TABLE IX:7  | Marching with Orange Parades and Discord  | IX          | 16   |
| TABLE IX:8  | Gaelic Athletic Association and Discord   | IX          | 18   |
| TABLE IX:9  | Type of T.V. Programme watched<br>Frequently and Discord  | IX          | 23   |
| TABLE IX:10 | Ulster Disorders on Television and<br>Affect to Government  | IX          | 25   |
| TABLE IX:11 | Ulster Disorders on Television and<br>Discord   | IX          | 26   |
| TABLE IX:12 | Ulster Disorders on Television and<br>Attitudes to Riots  | IX          | 26   |
| TABLE X:1   | Importance of Obeying Authority Figures   | x           | 2    |
| TABLE X:2   | Negative Affect to Government and<br>Respect to Authority Figures   | x           | 5    |
| TABLE X:3   | Approval of Disorder and Respect to<br>Authority Figures  | x           | 6    |
| TABLE X:4   | Bases of Political Deference  | x           | 7    |
| TABLE X:5   | Reasons for Supporting the Government   | x           | 9    |
| TABLE X:6   | Social Trust  | x           | 12   |
| TABLE X:7   | Optimism - Pessimism and Affect to<br>Government  | x           | 14   |
| TABLE X:8   | Social Distance   | x           | 16   |
| TABLE X:9   | Social Distance and Negative Affect to<br>Government among Catholics  | X           | 17   |
| TABLE X:10  | Difference regarding Disorder Acceptance<br>between those Accepting and Rejecting<br>Certain Social Relationships | e<br>K<br>X | 18   |
| TABLE XI:1  | B.S.S./T.S.S. Ratio before First Split<br>in A.I.D. Analysis  | XI          | 3    |

14

•

.

|            |  | Chapter | Page |  |
|------------|--|---------|------|--|
| FIGURE I   | Primary Schoolboys with Positive<br>Affect for Government    | XI      | 6    |  |
| FIGURE II  | Secondary Schoolboys with Positive<br>Affect for Government  | XI      | 10   |  |
| FIGURE III | Primary School Protestant Readiness<br>to Endorse Violence   | XI      | 13   |  |
| FIGURE IV  | Secondary School Protestant Readiness<br>to Endorse Violence | XI      | 15   |  |
| FIGURE V   | Primary School Catholic Readiness to<br>Endorse Violence     | XI      | 17   |  |
| FIGURE VI  | Secondary School Catholic Readiness to<br>Endorse Violence   | XI      | 19   |  |

· ·

ł

· ·

#### Acknowledgments

In presenting this thesis I particularly acknowledge a debt to the Northern Ireland Community Relations Commission which sponsored the project; Professor Richard Rose of the Department of Politics, University of Strathclyde, who acted as my supervisor; and the Social Science Research Council for a grant enabling me to work towards a Ph.D degree. I also wish to thank Mr. John Malone, who during his time with the Community Relations Commission, helped me in my first approaches to a number of school principals; and Mr. Alwyn Sutherland who took copious notes during the prepilot studies. My thanks are also due to numerous school principals and teachers who co-operated in various stages of the surveys; 3,800 children and young people who answered numerous questions and filled in their responses to over 200,000 questions; the staff of the Northern Ireland Community Relations Commission and the Northern Ireland Ministry of Education Statistics Branch. I particularly wish to thank the staff of the Social Statistics Laboratory and the department of Politics, Strathclyde, for their patience and help with various problems; Mrs. E. Elder and Mrs. R. West who typed the thesis; and my wife who read all the proofs.

James L. Russell

, . <sup>. .</sup> .

and the second second

### Chapter I

## Civic Learning

As soon as the gun-smoke clears and the street battles cease for a moment, the propaganda war takes over. Veneers of prejudice are as carefully applied as a surgeon grafting new skin. Gradually the skin becomes thick enough to withstand any cry for humanity, any appeal to reason.

Alf McCreary, Belfast Telegraph, 20 June, 1971

The aim of this study is to investigate some of the basic civic attitudes of schoolboys who have lived through violent years in Northern Ireland. The two main attitudes to be investigated are: emotional affect towards Government just before direct rule was announced from Westminster; and attitudes towards political disorder. These two basic attitudes will be investigated separately for Protestants and Catholics against their social background and other social and political attitudes they possess. Although Protestants and Catholics share much in common, there is much that divides them, and part of this investigation will be to pin-point to what extent there are real differences between the communities.

Civic attitudes are to be studied but 'civic education' is not a broad enough term to describe how such attitudes are acquired. Civic education can emanate from any source, including school, and involves the <u>deliberate</u> teaching of political information, values and behaviour. The term 'civics' refers to school-classes which are designed to increase loyalty to, or knowledge of, the political counterpart of the community the school serves. Civic attitudes, in their broadest sense, are learned through a process which many political scientists have labelled "political socialization". In the International Encyclopaedia of the Social Sciences political socialization is defined

as encompassing -

... all political learning, formal and informal, deliberate and unplanned, at every stage of the life cycle, including not only explicitly political learning but also nominally non-political learning that affects political behaviour, such as the learning of politically relevant social attitudes and the acquisition of politically relevant personality characteristics. 1

The term 'political socialization' began to appear in the American political science literature in the early 1960s.<sup>2</sup> Several books have been written on the political socialization of children;<sup>3</sup> a series of articles reporting findings on high school seniors and their parents;<sup>4</sup> some papers focusing on specific groups such as urban blacks and poor whites;<sup>5</sup> others examine specific topics in child socialization.<sup>6</sup> Three introductory textbooks on the subject have been produced<sup>7</sup> and several anthologies.<sup>8</sup> British studies began with Almond and Verba's 'Civic Culture'.<sup>9</sup> British studies include such topics as party identification, political interest,<sup>10</sup> role aspirations and attitudinal patterns,<sup>11</sup> cognition of political figures,<sup>12</sup> support for nation and government,<sup>13</sup> and the influence of Modern Studies upon political attitudes.<sup>14</sup>

Studies of political learning in children leave little doubt that before adolescence children have cognitions and feelings about political objects. Several studies have shown that children have extremely favourable views of the political world and political cynicism does not develop until Secondary school. Yet such cynicism as did develop was not, in most cases, sufficient to induce the child, or young person, to turn with anger against his Government. Some groupings of children diverge from this pattern: American blacks and poor whites become less positive towards Government as they grow older and their support depends more upon specific rewards than upon any emotional ties they may have with Government. How do schoolboys in Northern Ireland who have newly arrived upon the political scene during the last few violent years of the old Stormont regime view their Government? Survey findings may help us understand what adult communities teach their children and youth just before the collapse of a regime.

As to who, or what, has greatest influence upon children's political attitudes there is much disagreement. Most studies see parents as most important in transmitting basic political values to their children, but Jennings <u>et al</u> found little correspondence between the political views of high school seniors and their parents except on very general values, such as party identification.<sup>15</sup> Hess and Torney hold that school is much more important in political socialization than the home,<sup>16</sup> but the Michigan group found that high school civics courses had little influence upon civic attitudes except among blacks.<sup>17</sup> Langton sees home, peer group, and school playing different, but complementary, roles in socializing political efficiency.<sup>18</sup> In Northern Ireland, are school classes in civics, history, geography, literature, and religious instruction the cause or a symptom of community conflict? Would a merger of Protestant and Catholic schools create common political attitudes?

Political socialization is best thought of as a learning process which continues throughout life. The importance of studying the process in schoolboys is that they are likely to learn the values of community uncritically due to little prior, or extra-community, knowledge and because early learning takes place when fundamental personality characteristics are being formed. Learning occurs through anticipation, imitation, and identification. Anticipatory socialization

Ch. I = p.4.

refers to the acquisition of attitudes and values about adult roles. and the gathering of specific information, that cannot be applied until For instance, a very young boy in Belfast may not be able later life. to build 'man-sized' barricades, but may anticipate the day when he will be able to do so. Imitation involves copying, or modelling the If six year old boys cannot shoot behaviour of relevant others. bullets they may lob stones at soldiers. Identification includes not only behaving in a similar manner to relevant others, but feeling the same values attached to the behaviour. In this way social values are internalized to the extent that they appear right, moral and just. One ten-year-old Catholic boy in Northern Ireland doubtless believed it would be just to ....

> Put Police out. British Army out. Free the enterniees. tell ted Heath to get lost, make a United Ireland, let the IRA in... put Protistince out ... (uncorrected spelling)

As did the ten-year-old Protestant boy who wrote ...

Dump all Cathics in Irish sea and stop the troubles and shoot the IRA

(uncorrected spelling)

Objections to studying how children acquire specific political cognitions, attitudes and behaviours have often rested upon a narrow conception of politics, i.e. political participation or voting. One such objection is that children have a pre-political personality which is formed in the general culture of the community and only later generalized to politics. It is assumed that children learn first about very general values which are later expressed politically. The <u>sequence</u> of learning is stressed insofar as it may affect what is learned, but there is no evidence to suggest that children of eight or nine are not

Ch.I = p.5.

5. 5

learning general values and specific political lessons at the same time. Evidence from this survey suggests that very young school children are learning about politics: not simply how to comply with political laws, but who their political enemies are and what they must do to overthrow, or destroy, them. Classifying political enemies as 'dogs' or 'vermin' puts them into a sub-human group to which one does not have to justify one's behaviour in attempts to contain, or destroy, them. A multi-causal explanation of political behaviour is suggested: children, are acquiring specific political attitudes whilst personality is in formation.

To other objectors, children are not in a 'state of readiness' to take part in the political process, and the study of their political development is postponed to late adolescence. But political decisions are still taken somewhere by someone. Children must learn, at least, to comply with what they do not fully understand, and learning to support decision makers they know little about is certainly a vital part of civic learning. In Northern Ireland children of seven and eight are learning the outward actions, at least, of unconstitutional politics.

> Kill the British. Hung Faulkner and Heath and give a United Ireland. (9-year old Catholic) (uncorrected spelling)

Not let the Cathlicks across the border and shout them if they come. (9-year old Protestant) (uncorrected spelling)

From very early in their school life such boys can join the junior sections of movements engaged in the major conflicts of the day and of the century. Perhaps in a country divided as Northern Ireland is about the nature and boundaries of the State the 'readiness' for learning about politics and political action is reached at a much earlier age than where people only disagree over politics.

Another objection to studying political learning in children is that one cannot assume that adult orientations towards political authority are greatly affected by childhood experiences. There are, however, no longitudinal studies to show that this is not the case. But one cannot state <u>precisely</u> what effect childhood learning will have for the political future. Political socialization studies do not endeavour to deal precisely with this question; nor do they propose that childhood learning completely determines the political attitudes of adults. But the attitudes acquired by a young person may be influential upon his later behaviour and this is especially the case where, as in Northern Ireland, opposing groups are stable for long periods of time.

Students of politics are interested in the effects of governing for the whole population, including children. Political systems, because of different structures, laws, and distributions of authority, tend to produce specific political attitudes. These are communicated to children, and it is necessary to examine the 'fit' between adult and child attitudes at specific periods in the life of a regime to understand the effectiveness of vertical, or inter-generational, socialisation. In Northern Ireland children hear of Government from their parents, some of whom have been actively engaged in political disorder. How early in life do they acquire violent political outlooks?

In a peaceful polity it is relatively easy to side-step questions about the influence of childhood experience upon the political future. But where disorder is so widespread that few, if any, have escaped its influence, some assumptions <u>must</u> be made about the possible effects for children and their future development. One must consider the conditions under which schoolboys have learned to accept and engage in political disorders in order to vary such influences, where possible, in the hope of reducing, or eliminating, future violence. Others may wish to understand which influences are more likely to increase disorder in order to escalate violence.

Where disorder has occurred at fairly regular intervals, as it has in Ulster, this is good reason for assuming that childhood learning, if violent, is generalized to adult political behaviour. Alternatively one may say that the major political lessons one acquires in Ulster are learned in childhood. The Ulster boy of five throwing a stone may anticipate a ten-year-old with a petrol bomb or a teenager with a gun. The enemy remains the same, only the weapons become more deadly. A longitudinal study of such a boy would involve contact with his family directly, or through his school. In Ulster, at the present, such a study could involve dangers and difficulties. In the absence of such studies we must rely, to a great extent, upon comparisons between adult and schoolboy studies. In what follows numerous comparisons will be made between schoolboys in this study and adults in the Strathclyde Loyalty Survey.<sup>19</sup>

A particular way of regarding political socialization can open and foreclose many lines of enquiry. In the socialization literature there are a number of basic models. A 'content' model of socialization pays attention to what is being learned. The main content studied here are political affect to Government and attitudes to political discord. These are specific political attitudes. From time to time other social and political attitudes will be examined with reference to their bearing upon the basic attitudes investigated herein.

An 'agents' model draws attention to by whom political lessons

4.4

are taught. For instance, does belonging to the Junior Orange Association or playing gaelic games appear to increase or decrease violent outlooks upon the political world. The apparent influence of various agents, including the school, will be investigated throughout the study.

A 'developmental' model of political socialization alerts us to when political learning takes place. When do political concepts form? Do they follow any particular order in forming? These questions will be taken up when political cognitions are investigated in connection with affect towards Government.

A '<u>circumstances</u>' model proposes to examine the <u>conditions</u> under which learning takes place. For instance, does a high level of political disorder in a district appear to increase violence acceptance in schoolboys? Does living close to the Border make a Protestant more 'loyal' than his co-religionists far from it? And does living in a Protestant town make a Catholic boy any less violent in his political views?

A '<u>consequences</u>' model is concerned with <u>what effect political</u> <u>socialization has for the future of the whole political system</u>. Will the lessons learned during years of political violence in Northern Ireland result in an even more unstable system of Government and a continual recourse to disorder in pursuit of political goals? Or will children and young people be so sickened of violence and lack of rules that a prolonged period of peaceful co-existence will emerge?

At different places in this investigation various models of political socialization will be employed. The developmental model has been employed extensively elsewhere,<sup>20</sup> and will only be referred to briefly in connection with cognitions of Government (Chapter IV). Whilst investigating differences and similarities between respondents according to the content of their political attitudes (Chapter IV), attention will be paid to the agents most likely to influence such outlooks (Chapters V, VI, VII and IX); the circumstances under which they are learned (Chapter VIII); the aggregate pattern of influences (Chapter XI); and the possible consequences for the future (Chapter XII). This is a political study of political socialization and little attention will be specifically devoted to the personality factors which may influence political behaviour,<sup>21</sup> but some time will be spent looking at other social and political attitudes which are associated with the basic attitudes examined herein (Chapter X). Moreover, in the circumstances of Northern Ireland, there are few things from school sports to job aspirations that cannot be linked directly or indirectly to political circumstances.

### Footnotes - Chapter I

- 1. Fred I Greenstein, "Political Socialization", International Encyclopedia of the Social Sciences, Vol.14, p.551
- 2. See, for instance, Fred I. Greenstein, "The Benevolent Leader: Children's Images of Political Authority", American Political Science Review, 54 (December, 1960) pp. 934-44; Lewis A. Froman, Jnr., "Personality and Political Socialization", Journal of Politics, 23 (May, 1961), pp.341-52.
- 3. Fred I. Greenstein, Children and Politics, (New Haven: Yale University Press), 1965; Robert D. Hess and Judith Torney, The Development of Political Attitudes in Children, (Chicago: Aldine) 1967; David Easton and Jack Dennis, Children and the Political System: Origins of Political Legitimacy, (New York: McGraw-Hill), 1969.
- 4. M. Kent Jennings, "Pre-Adult Orientations to Multiple Systems of Government", Midwest Journal of Political Science, (August, 1967), pp. 291-317; Jennings and Richard Niemi, "The Transmission of Political Values from Parent to Child", American Political Science Review, 62 (March, 1968), pp. 169-85; Jennings and Kenneth P. Langton, "Mothers Versus Fathers: The Formation of Political Orientations among Young Americans, Journal of Politics, 31 (May, 1969), pp. 329-57; and Langton and Jennings, "Political Socialization and the High School Civics Curriculum in the United States", American Political Science Review, 62 (September, 1968), pp. 852-67.
- 5. Dean Jaros et al, "The Malevolent Leader: Political Socialization in a Domestic Sub-Culture", American Political Science Review, 62 (June, 1968), pp. 564-78; Edward S. Greenberg, "Black Children and the Political System: A Study of Socialization to Support", Annual Meeting of the American Political Science Association, September, 1969.
- 6. Dean Jaros, "Children's Orientations towards the President: Some Additional Theoretical Considerations and Data", Journal of Politics, 29 (May, 1967), pp. 368-88; Roberta S. Sigel, "Image of a President: Some Insights into the Political Views of Schoolchildren", American Political Science Review, 62 (March, 1968) pp. 216-26; Kenneth P. Langton, "Peer Group and School in the Political Socialization Process", American Political Science Review 61 (September, 1967), 751-59; and David Easton and Jack Dennis, "The Child's Acquisition of Regime Norms: Political Efficacy", American Political Science Review, 61 (March, 1967) 25-39.

- 7. Richard E. Dawson and Kenneth Prewitt, Political Socialization, (Boston: Little Brown, 1969); Kenneth P. Langton, Political Socialization, (New York: Oxford University Press, 1969); and Roberta S. Sigel, Learning About Politics, (Random House: New York, 1970).
- 8. See for example, Jack Dennis and Frederick W. Frey, eds., Explorations of Political Socialization: A reader of Contemporary Research, (New York: Wiley, 1970).
- 9. G.A. Almond and S. Verba, The Civic Culture, (Princeton, 1963)
- 10. P.R. Abramson, "The Political Socialization of the English Schoolboy", Ph.D. Dissertation, Political Science Department, Michigan State University.
- 11. Ted Tapper, Young People and Society, (Faber and Faber, 1971).
- 12. Fred I. Greenstein et al, "Queen and Prime Minister The Child's Eye View", New Society, 23 October, 1969.
- 13. J. Dennis <u>et al</u>, "Support for Nation and Government among English Children", <u>British Journal of Political Science</u>, January 1971, pp. 25-48.
- 14. G. Mercer, "Political Learning and Political Education", Ph.D. thesis, Department of Politics, University of Strathclyde, 1971.
- 15. See Jennings and Niemi, op cit., (Introduction: Footnote 4).
- 16. See Hess and Torney, op. cit., (Chapter I: footnote 3).
- 17. See Langton and Jennings, op. cit., (Chapter I: footnote 4).
- 18. See Langton, Political Socialization, p. 140.
- 19. See Richard Rose, Governing Without Consensus: An Irish Perspective, (Faber and Faber, 1971).
- 20. Easton and Dennis, Children and the Political System, (Introduction: footnote 3).
- 21. For a study of this the reader is referred to Morris Fraser, <u>Children in Conflict</u>, (Secker and Warburg: London 1973), see Appendix IV.

14 1

# in a start and the start and t

### - - Chapter II

# Some Aspects of the Political History of Education in Northern Ireland

The context for this investigation is the whole history of Northern Ireland, including violent events up to the day Direct Rule was announced from Westminster, and influences precursive to the setting up of the State. The school is only one agent in political socialization and other influences may prove more important in shaping the civic orientations of schoolboys in Northern Ireland. Yet, since so much has been said and written about what schools can and cannot accomplish in civic education this chapter has been devoted to highlighting some of the political history of education in Northern Ireland and to discussing some of the educational debates arising therefrom.

Underlying tensions exist between Church and State in education which arise from differences in ideology, psychology, and Church-State structures. In traditional European society education was primarily a function of the Church. Exceptions to this general rule could be found in some Italian cities and German free cities, but, in the main, education was the prerogative of the rich and those intended for the Church. Because of the persisting likelihood of conflict between an extraterritorial Church and the State the prospect for Church-State conflict was relatively high in the middle ages.

This general pattern was upset by the Protestant Reformation, the emergence of the nation state, and the development of a scientific culture.<sup>1</sup> Where Protestantism gained control over education it passed into Protestant, community, or private hands. Where the religious struggle ended in a stalemate dual school systems developed. Where the Catholic counter-reformation succeeded renewed control over education was exercised. Rulers endeavoured to bring education under public control to keep pace with new technological developments and to reduce conflict, especially religious conflict, within their territories. Increased industrialization and the emergence of radical political movements further challenged religious control over education. In many European countries the Catholic Church went more and more upon the defensive to maintain its own system of schools.

In Sixteenth Century England state and church worked together towards a common allegiance in politics and religion. Religious instruction was a prime agent in civic education. Church and state relationships remained close in England until the early Nineteenth Century when the need for alliance in education began to diminish. The Industrial Revolution was creating a need for studies beyond the oversight of the clergy and differences in religious belief were no longer raising accusations of heresy and disloyalty. As James Murphy writes, "... experience had shown that differences in religious belief, though still capable of arousing considerable suspicion and hostility in many quarters, need no longer lead to disaffection and civil strife."<sup>2</sup> The State was now confronted with several large churches in Scotland, Ireland and Wales and pressure against State endowment of any one religion was growing.

In the American colonies the break with the Crown in 1776 provided an opportunity for dissenters to create a state of religious equality.<sup>3</sup> In the First Amendment to the new federal constitution church and state were officially separated. In some of the new states of the Union there were disestablishments with the birth of the new nation and in others disestablishment came during the next fifty years. But establishment remained a feature in some states until 1934 when the Supreme Court ruled that the federal separation must apply to all individual states.

Four types of relationships between Church and State have been observeds<sup>4</sup> (1) 'Public Confessionalism' exists where the state confesses religious beliefs and provides for their propagation. (2) 'Nonsectarian Christianity' can be observed where there is neutrality between Christian believers. Such a 'common Christianity' state may take two forms: (a) where all denominations are equally endowed by the state; (b) where the voluntary principle is in operation with equality between all churches but no state connection with any. (3) The 'neutral' state recognises the rights of believers and non-believers and extends no preference to either. (4) The 'secular' state breaks all connections between law and religion and propagates itw own secular morality.

Inasmuch as the Catholic Church had a special position in the Constitution, Eire practised public confessionalism. Here, Protestant parents, who are a small minority, anxiously watched the growing controversy over the Department of Education's proposals for community schools. In effect, the community schools were felt to be essentially Catholic in character and were unacceptable to many Protestant parents who prefer to have their children educated in a school of their own denomination. England tends towards non-sectarian Christianity whilst the U.S.S.R. provides an example of a secular state.

These generalizations are not watertight and different approaches to church-state relationships have been practised by the same state at different times of its history and by different parts of one state. The rights of non-believers are protected in Northern Ireland in that their children need not attend classes for religious instruction. Believers

- Real AND A SEC

are also protected in that special provisions safeguarding religion have been built into Northern Ireland laws. Others may hold that inter-denominational Protestantism is practised in Ulster providing County schools for Protestant children. Alternatively, County schools are open to all, but the degree of open-ness depends very much upon their acceptability to all concerned. It will be the aim of the rest of this chapter to discuss the political history of education in Northern Ireland in order to highlight some of the modern educational debates upon which survey materials may shed some light.

Before 1831 children receiving education in the North of Ireland generally attended small single-teacher schools run by the local churches, or by individuals, providing elementary and, to a lesser degree, secondary education. The Kildare Place Society 'for the promoting of the education of the poor in Ireland' had been founded in 1811. The Society received grants from parliament for the assistance of local schools and wished to give "the same advantages to all classes of professing Christians without interfering with the peculiar religious opinions of any."" To begin with the Society's schools were attended by children of all denominations, but its method of reading the bible "without note or comment" was not acceptable to Catholic priests, who felt that this was an inadequate way of giving religious instruction. To the Catholic Church literary and religious instruction must be combined. Also simply reading the Scriptures without comment left their interpretation open to error which, to Catholics, only the teaching of the Catholic Church \* \* . . . could remove.

Yet some Catholics, under the old Dublin regime, continued to agitate for a national system of education. In September, 1831, the Government announced its intention of withdrawing support from the

Kildare Place Society and assuming direct responsibility for Primary The programme involved giving "the people of Ireland the education. advantages of a combined literary and separate religious education." The Board of Commissioners which was set up was instructed to safeguard the religion of the pupils. Religious instruction in the National Schools was to be given in separate groups, with the consent of parents, by priests, ministers, and those recognised by the various denominations. Both Protestant and Catholic opinion was dissatisfied. Many Protestants expressed a wish for a wider use of the scriptures and Catholics found separate religious instruction short of their ideal of "literary and religious instruction universally combined". Yet the programme was adopted with the main parts of the new education structure being: (1) voluntary schools established by the churches, giving religious instruction according to the desires of the management, with the state paying the salaries of most teachers; (2) 'Model Schools' built and maintained by the state in which six or more children, with the consent of their parents, could receive separate religious instruction with a teacher provided to give this during school hours. Thus religious convictions and desires for integrated education separated the school children under the old Dublin regime.

The educational structure for which the new Government of Northern Ireland assumed responsibility in 1921 had previously been administered by three separate bodies dealing respectively with elementary, secondary, and technical education. The Commissioners of National Education, the most important of these, were concerned with elementary education. The Commissioners, from public funds, provided help in the building of schools, made payment to teachers, and stimulated the production of textbooks. Although the Commissioners' influence in

education had steadily increased in financing and generally directing the system they remained auxiliaries to the churches which undertook the bulk of instruction of the young. The growth of denominational schools resulted in much overlapping in elementary education and many of the schools were badly designed and poorly equipped. The Intermediate (Secondary) Education Board mainly distributed public monies on the results of written examinations to outstanding pupils. But ' the Board had little control over the schools such children attended, and in 1921 there was no official control over the age, qualifications, or conditions of service of the teachers, or the suitability of school The other main part of the educational structure inherited premises. from the Dublin regime was technical instruction which, by 1921, was operating on relatively modern lines.

The new Government of Northern Ireland was confronted with structures and conflicting principles of education from which it endeavoured to create an educational service which would be up to modern standards and realize the support of its citizens. On the other hand, perhaps the members of the Government knew quite well that no state system of education could possibly bring about agreement in all religious groups operating voluntary schools.

. .

When the task of the new Stormont Government is viewed against the spirit of the times its efforts to create a universally acceptable system of state education appears even more impossible. Protestants had mobilised themselves against Home Rule which, to many, meant "Rome Rule" and Catholics, with United Ireland aspirations, had supported the Home Rule Bill through the desire for an autonomous Ireland and through fear of becoming a permanent minority in a new Northern state. Like the Nationalist MPs who refused to take their seats in the Northern

#### Ch.II - p.7

parliament, many Catholic school managers and teachers refused to recognise the Northern Ministry of Education. Their policy of non-co-operation was based, primarily, upon the belief that the Partition of Ireland would either not take place, or would not last more than a few years. The boycotting of the Ulster Ministry was also partly encouraged by the delay in transferring educational authority to the North; by the doles sent from Dublin to non-co-operating Northern Catholic teachers: and by the willingness of the Dublin government to set up examination centres in Northern Ireland for Catholic schools not presenting candidates for examinations set by the Ulster ministry of Education. When, in the autumn of 1922, the Dublin authorities withdrew their doles to non-co-operating teachers in the North the non-co-operation campaign collapsed and teachers and school managers sought aid from the new Northern Ireland ministry of Education. But, by standing out against the Ulster ministry of education and government Catholic school managers had placed themselves in a weak position regarding future educational policies.

Before the transfer of educational services from Dublin took place in 1922 the new government of Northern Ireland set up the Lynn Committee<sup>6</sup> to "... enquire and report on the existing organisation and administration of the educational services in Northern Ireland, and to make such recommendations as may be considered necessary for the proper co-ordination and effective carrying out of these services." The Interim Report of the Lynn Committee is the first basis of legislation for education in Northern Ireland. Professor Akenson writes, in Education and Enmity: The Control of Schooling in Northern Ireland 1920-50:<sup>7</sup>

> In all probability the refusal of the Roman Catholic authorities to join the Lynn committee was the single most important determinant of the educational history of Northern Ireland from 1920 to the present day. By refusing to sit they surrendered their last shred of influence at the very time when the basic character

of Ulster's educational development was being determined. From the recommendations made by the Lynn committee emerged the principles of the 1923 Londonderry Act, and that Act was the foundation of all The refusal of the Catholic later developments. religious authorities to exert their influence upon the Lynn committee and subsequently upon the Londonderry Act was especially unfortunate because, despite the civil war that was raging in Northern Ireland, the Unionist government was making a determined effort to govern in a non-sectarian manner, an attempt which was abandoned in the mid-1920s. Although the Lynn committee claimed to have kept in mind Catholic interests, its recommendations were inevitably framed according to Protestant educational assumptions.

In proposing the establishment of local education authorities the Lynn committee assumed that there was "a general desire in the six counties that the local administration of education should be extended and strengthened." Many national schools could only afford minimal facilities and, the committee estimated that, in expanding Belfast, at least 12,000 children of school age were without school places. The Lynn committee may have based some of their proposals upon a misunderstanding regarding the demand for local control of education. The Catholic need appeared to be one for increased financial support from local education authorities for schools which could no longer carry on unaided. Protestants, on the other hand, desired both local involvement in education and aid to schools through local rates.

In order to weld the elements of the old system into a new unified educational structure the 1923 Education Act constituted each County and County Borough as the responsible education authority for the area. Between the Counties, County Boroughs, and the schools were imposed regional education committees (two or more for each county) with supervisory powers over the schools in their areas. Provisions were made for the transfer of schools under voluntary management and for the establishment of statutory committees for each voluntary elementary school, whereby four members of the committees were nominated by the former manager and two by the education committee. A school accepting this form of control was able to obtain greater financial assistance from public funds than schools remaining under the management of an individual or private committee. Four classes of schools emerged:

> (1) Provided school: built and completely maintained by the local education authority and the ministry of education

(2) Transferred schools: transferred to civic management by former managers; completely maintained by the local education authority and the ministry of education

(3) Four-and-Two Schools: management committee made up of four representatives of the managers or trustees and two from the regional education committee; complete payment of salaries of teachers, one half of all heating, lighting, cleaning and repair from the local rates; a capital expenditure grant from the local education authority "if they think fit"; a capital grant from the ministry of education at the ministry's discretion

(4) Independent schools: completely independent of local control; teachers salaries from the ministry of education; nothing for capital expenditures; usually receiving one half of the cost of heating, lighting and cleaning from the local rates.

The Lynn committee recommended that religious instruction should be given in State aided schools. As Akenson suggests, "The plain fact was that the Lynn report favoured granting similar religious rights to two distinct classes of schools, but proposed to finance fully only the Protestant schools".<sup>8</sup> The Education Act (1923) however attempted to avoid the thorny problem of religious instruction in normal school hours. Section 26 of the Act stipulated that "... the education authority shall not provide religious instruction in any such public elementary school", and section 66(3) required that the religious denomination of a teacher must not be taken into account by the education authorities when making an appointment. Ministers of religion and/or acceptable laymen

1 -

(generally schoolteachers) were to have free access to teach the children religion, outwith compulsory school hours, if the parents so desired, but any child could be excused from attending such school classes. In contrast, four-and-two school committees and the managers of independent schools had the right to appoint teachers without prohibitions on the introduction of religious considerations. In provided and transferred schools religious education was to become an appendage to compulsory secular education. The main reasons for this were said to be keeping open the possibility of common education for all children and fear of contravening the Constitution which forbade the endowment, out of public funds, of any religion. Akenson comments:

> Clearly, Lord Londonderry (Minister of Education) was trying to navigate between two dangerous shoals. On. the one side he was striving to avoid clashing with the judicial committee of the United Kingdom privy council which could declare portions of his act invalid if they ran counter to the religious endowment clause of the government of Ireland act; hence a phrase was included prohibiting the local education authorities from providing denominational religious instruction in the schools they controlled. On the other side Londonderry was trying to avoid the politically fatal charge that the new category of schools, those controlled by the local civic authorities, would be secular or Godless institutions. In the actual event Londonderry was to escape difficulties with the United Kingdom legal authorities but to run foul of the Protestant denominations. 9

In his pamphlet on <u>Catholic Schools - A Survey of a Northern</u> <u>Ireland Problem</u>, J.J. Campbell refers to the inducements which were built into the 1923 Education Act in order to bring about the transfer of schools to local education authorities:

> The "inducements" were in effect to take overall financial responsibility for transferred schools; to provide some financial support from the local authorities 'if they think fit', for the building and equipment of voluntary schools under the control of an approved committee; and nothing at all for the building and equipment of voluntary schools under the control of a manager.

As an official spokesman of the Ministry of Education wrote later, "financial pressure made irresistably for transfer". 10

By 1924, however, local education authorities had provided only two new schools. Ten schools had been transferred and 1,984 were still The Protestant and Catholic Churches would not accept the voluntary. secularization of the compulsory educational system. Catholics had not co-operated with the Lynn committee and it was generally believed that they would have little interest in State schools. As the Very Revd., William Corkey said in his book, An Episode in the History of Protestant Ulster, 1923-47, 11 "But the Protestant Churches knew that the Roman Catholic Church would never permit her children to enter such schools". The Act, it was widely believed, had been planned by those who knew perfectly well that the Catholics would stand out. The Northern Ireland 1923 Education Act contrasts starkly with the Education (Scotland) Act of 1918 where the Government openly approved the principle of denominational schools. This involved giving specific safeguards about the belief and character of the teachers tobe appointed, and about the control of religious instruction by the churches. With a few exceptions the solution was approved by the Scottish people.

Protestants had opposed Home Rule for Ireland with a view to protecting religion and the Protestant culture. They had believed that these vital interests were secured by the provisions of the 1920 Government of Ireland Act. Now they feared that the new Education Act required them to transfer a sacred trust. They felt that the new system of education was to the detriment of the Protestant community in that it altered a fundamental principle of education which included religious instruction; had taken away safeguards for appointing suitable teachers; and removed the liberty of an education authority to appoint teachers who were qualified and willing to give religious instruction. They feared the transferred Protestant schools might come under Catholic management in Nationalist areas where Catholic teachers and principals might be set over Protestant pupils. On the other hand, Catholics, being a minority in Northern Ireland, feared that their schools would come under Protestant education committees with Protestant principals and teachers in charge of Catholic pupils. But, more important, the secularization of the State system denied their principle of "literary and religious education universally combined."

Catholics stood apart from the educational system and the 1923 Act caused an uproar among Protestants. After the Act was passed a delegate meeting of the Church of Ireland (Protestant) and the Presbyterian Church unanimously declared against it, arguing that churches which transferred their schools to the state were entitled to representation on the management committees of such schools; that teachers should be of the same denomination, as far as possible, as the children attending the school; and advised school managers not to transfer their schools at the time. The Methodist church joined in the resolution of the meeting which was sent to the Prime Minister. In the controversy between the Government and the Churches the latter were supported by the Orange Order. During negotiations with the Minister of Education the churches discovered that the principle of moral education the Minister had in mind was "instruction in civics and ethics and good citizenship". The churches proclaimed, however, that the real strength of Ulster lay in Bible teaching. Yet the Government refused to move replying that to do so would contravene the Constitution which prohibited the endowment of any religion. The Protestant churches, advised by counsel that there was no reason in the Government of Ireland Act,

or elsewhere, for the Government's policy in education, confronted the candidates for the 1925 election with the implications of the 1923 Education Act and required their reactions to it.

Under pressure from the United Education Committee of the three main Protestant churches (Church of Ireland, Presbyterian and Methodist) and the Orange Order, the Government passed an amending Act in 1925 deleting the offending sections. By simply removing such sections the local education committees were allowed to provide for bible instruction in their schools, but this was no guarantee that such instruction would The Minister of Education continued in the view that educabe given. tion authorities could not provide and pay for religious instruction as defined in the 1923 Act, but advised that they could adopt a programme of 'simple bible instruction' which teachers could be required to give as part of the ordinary school course. This did not assure the Protestant managers that teachers would be provided by the education authorities to give such instruction. This fear was greatest in Nationalist (Catholic) areas where it was felt that should Catholics form a majority on education committees they would not provide bible instruction. Catholics, on the other hand, thought that 'simple bible instruction' was insufficient as a means of realizing christian character in their children thus finding little pleasure in the 1925 Amendment.

When explaining the 1925 amendment act in Parliament Lord Londonderry appeared to give the impression that the act had changed almost nothing. He asserted that although certain prohibitions regarding the provision of religious education by the local education authorities and the choosing of teachers had been removed the prohibitions regarding the endowment of religion in the Government of Ireland Act remained. Thus the local education authorities and those choosing teachers were restricted by the Government of Ireland Act. Nevertheless, the amending act seemed to be accepted by the United Education Committee of the Protestant Church. The Education Committee's acceptance of the amendment was based, however, not simply upon the act itself, but upon a truce between Lord Londonderry and themselves. The compromise allowed: (1) local education committees to require that a "programme of simple Bible instruction" be given in provided or transferred schools in the period set apart on the timetable for religious instruction; (2) the Bible instruction was not to be peculiar to any particular religious denomination; (3) the period set apart on the timetable for Bible instruction was not to be included within the hours of compulsory school attendance; (4) teachers were not compelled to give religious instruction if the school managers used the period for religious instruction for specific denominational teaching.

That education committees could require teachers to give religious instruction seemed to permit a double standard in Ulster education. Alternatively, this may be an incidental consequence of other things. All the transferred and provided schools were Protestant schools and religious instruction was general Protestant instruction. All the teachers salaries and all educational expenses of such schools were paid for by local and central government authorities. Nevertheless the attorney-general of Northern Ireland certified the legality of the 1925 Act and raised no objections to the interpretation of the act agreed between the ministry and the Protestant Education Committee. Neither did the United Kingdom government intervene although the amendment act and its interpretation appeared to contravene the Government of Ireland Act of 1920.

The amending act of 1925 did make the education system more

palatable to Protestants and the transfer of some of their schools began. By 1930 440 schools had been transferred and 33 new schools provided. Outside the state system remained 1,420 schools, many of them under Protestant control. As the events of the next few years were to show Protestants transferring their schools to the state would require a more positive provision for the giving of religious instruction in the schools. Although the amending act allowed regions and county boroughs to require that teachers give Bible instruction it did not compel the committees to impose this regulation. Thus, managers of schools transferring to local control usually insisted on the inclusion in the deeds of transfer of a clause binding the regional education committee to see that Bible was taught daily. Most education committees were able to reach agreements with transferring schools, but trouble arose when the Armagh regional education committee refused to insert in the deeds of schools seeking transfer a clause requiring daily Bible instruction. The position regarding Bible instruction in transferred Protestant schools and the "preferential treatment of Catholics was put by the Reverend William Corkey in a statement to the Belfast Synod of the Presbyterian Church in 1928:

> We cannot be expected to view with equanimity the working of an Act which strips the Protestant cause of over half a million pounds' worth of property and takes away from the Protestant Churches all association with education, and at the same time endows the Church of Rome and entrenches her clergy more firmly than ever in the educational system of our country. 12

The Protestants, however, were able - like the Catholics - to maintain complete control of their own schools if they were willing to pay the same price of finding their own funds for many educational expenses.

Prior to the 1929 General Election Protestant clerics mounted a

campaign to secure <u>statutory</u> requirements for the provision of religious instruction in the state schools. The United Education Committee of the Protestant Churches declared that "it is only the feeling that the Protestant cause was in grave peril that has compelled them to lay their case before the public on the eve of the General Election". The General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church in Ireland urged the Government

> ... to make it incumbent on every education authority in Northern Ireland, in every instance where the parents of not less than ten pupils attending a provided or transferred school shall signify in writing their desire to have religious instruction given to their children, to adopt a Programme of simple Bible Instruction to be given by the teachers in that school in the period set apart in the time-table for religious instruction, always providing that such a programme shall not include instruction according to the tenets of any particular religious denomination .... 13

The Prime Minister, having secured information regarding the attitudes of candidate selection committees in the constituencies, realized that the Government's recent policy on education would be divisive of the Unionist Party. To end the dispute he issued the statement:

> The Joint Committee of the Protestant Churches and the Loyal Orange Institution aim at obtaining -Firstly, security for the permanence of Bible Teaching in all provided and transferred schools, and secondly, that scholars shall not have imposed upon them teachers whose principles are out of harmony with the principles of their parents (i.e. of same religion - ed.). To secure these two ends the Government is pledged by the declaration of the Minister of Education and confirmed by me. 14

The 1930 Education Act laid down that Bible instruction of an undenominational character <u>should</u> be given in transferred and provided schools; that such instruction should be given by the teachers; that the previous managers of transferred schools and their successors in office should have authority to nominate not less than half the members
of local school management committees which were given important rights in the appointment of teachers; that the Minister of Education should appoint representatives of the transferrors to serve on the County and County Borough Education Committees; and that Government grants amounting to 50 per cent of the approved cost should be available for the replacement, extension and repair of voluntary schools.

The 1930 Amendment Act safeguarded the Protestant religion in the state schools. By the outbreak of the Second World War 489 schools had been transferred to the local education authorities which had themselves provided 166. State schools had come to be recognized as Protestant schools staffed by Protestant teachers for Protestant pupils. The Protestant character of the state was reflected in the state schools. That bible instruction was undenominational was only satisfying to Protestant denominations and not even to all such, since some of the evangelical sects and small churches saw school bible instruction as a weak version of their own vision of Christianity. To Catholics, however, simple bible instruction was inter-denominational Protestant religious instruction since it concerned only one source of divine revelation, i.e. the bible. Not even bible instruction from a Catholic translation proved capable of bringing Catholics into the state school system since this neglected the teaching of the Catholic church as another source of revelation. Also, the state schools relegated bible instruction to specific periods. This was not pleasing to all Protestants, some of whom desired a more universal use of the scriptures. To Catholics, separation of school life into secular and religious categories was fundamentally unacceptable.

The addition to the amending bill of 1930 regarding the 50 per cent grant of the approved cost of replacement, extension and repair

of voluntary schools deserves some comment. The Canon law required Catholic schools therefore only denominational schools were acceptable to the Catholic bishops. Their position was weak <u>vis-a-vis</u> the Ministry of Education and Government due to Catholic non-co-operation during the early years of the Northern Ireland state. When Joe Devlin, Nationalist MP, took his seat in Parliament the end of Catholic isolationism seemed in sight. When the Protestant clergy began to agitate in 1928-29 the Catholic bishops must have decided that the time was ripe to enter the educational debates within Northern Ireland.

The Catholic bishops stated that no state funds were available for the erection or equipment of new Catholic schools, nor were they able to expand their existing schools with state aid, except on conditions they were unable to accept. They further declared that any educational amendment further favouring the Protestant clergy, without giving some satisfaction to Catholics, would be "... an outrage on justice and decency...."<sup>15</sup>

The first demand that the Catholic bishops and educators made was probably that full financial support should be afforded to their schools on the grounds that provided and transferred schools were actually Protestant schools. The first demand was backed up with the threat that if the 1930 amendment was passed without concession to Catholics, legal action would be taken regarding the endowment of religion in state schools which the Constitution prohibited. The Catholic bishops, in fact, retreated from this position when the threat of legal action was dropped with the suggestion that the school committees management system, approved by the state, could be modified to fit with Catholic Church principles. In this case, the committees could attend to the purely secular side of education with Church managers controlling

:

all matters referring to religion and morals.

The Catholic bishops' position was supported by a campaign of Catholic laymen, politicians, journalists, priests - leading to the compromise position that an additional clause should be added to the education bill providing for 50 per cent grants for the construction and expansion of voluntary schools. The Catholic Church authorities thus accepted the 1930 Education Act.

Although the education authorities were hampered in developing a unified educational structure by religious and political conflicts they were not entirely unsuccessful in expanding and improving the system. By 1939 they had provided places in state schools for 48,000 children and had reconstructed many of the schools transferred to them. Many voluntary schools were rebuilt and extended with grants from the ministry. Scholarships were given to children to attend secondary schools who could not otherwise have done so, and the secondary school system was remodelled with the number of Grammar school children greatly increasing.<sup>16</sup>

The next major educational controversy involving a religious principle was sparked off in 1944 when the Northern Ireland Government pullished a White Paper<sup>17</sup> on proposed post-war educational legislation. In this the Government stated its intention of introducing a 'conscience clause' to protect the position of teachers in the County schools since such provision was necessary to comply with the Government of Ireland Act of 1920, section 5. (Endowment of religion prohibition.). The Protestants feared, on this occasion, that they had been misled in 1930 and that what guarantees they had regarding religious instruction in schools could be lost if education authorities could not take suitability or willingness to give bible instruction into account when making an appointment. This could lead, it was felt by many, to schools being without teachers who were willing to give religious instruction, or to bible instruction being given to Protestant children by Catholics or Communists.

The Education Act (1947) denied education committees the right to take account of the willingness or ability to give religious instruction into account when appointing teachers. Nor were teachers to suffer any loss of promotion or other advantages through not giving religious instruction. However the Act made it compulsory for Primary and Secondary schools to provide undenominational religious instruction and a collective act of worship. Consequently, there had to be provisions for education committees to appoint additional teachers to give religious instruction if none of the other appointees were suitable or willing. The Protestant Churches argued that this involved taking religion into account anyhow and the educational authorities may as well make sure of the religious instruction question when making any appointments.

Public grants to voluntary schools, a thorny subject almost anywhere, but especially so in Northern Ireland, aroused widespread debate in 1947. It was proposed that if voluntary schools agreed to the appointment of Four and Two Committees (i.e. one-third of members appointed by the local education authority) they would receive a 65 per cent grant for buildings and equipment and that local education authorities should assume full responsibility for the heating, lighting, cleaning and repairs. Those remaining entirely voluntary would receive only 50 per cent of such expenditure. The voluntary schools could not keep up with the post-war educational building programme even with 50 per cent grants for certain items. At the same time many Catholic

school managers felt that education committees would discriminate against them if they accepted representation from them on their com-The Catholic bishops declared, "We reject them because we mittees. fear that these committees are but an instalment to the complete transfer of our schools...."<sup>18</sup> Assurances that Four and Two Committees left the final decisions in their hands as previously produced the response that if this was the case there was little to be gained by the new committees and the grant may as well be given to the voluntary managers. The Government, facing the dilemma, agreed to provide 65 per cent of the capital and running costs of voluntary schools. This led, among Protestants, to considerable agitation about "Rome on the Rates". Protestants felt that they had transferred millions of pounds' worth of property to the state without financial compensation and that Catholics, who had maintained their voluntary status, not only kept their schools, but received huge grants from the Government to run them. Catholics, on the other hand, could argue that the Protestant churches had been well compensated for their property by the inclusion of simple bible instruction as a compulsory part of education in the County schools, (i.e. compulsory in the sense that it must be given to those whose parents desire it).

The Education Act of 1947 laid new responsibilities upon local education bodies which were too wide to be carried out by small regional committees. The County Education Authority lost its power to set up a number of smaller regional committees. The reforms in the Act were mainly educational which led to changes in the structures to carry them out. The Act recognised that children were entitled to an education suited to their age, capabilities and aptitudes. It prescribed three stages of education - primary, secondary, and further education -

and imposed on local education authorities the duty of assuring effective education through these stages in each area. Children up to the age of 11-plus were to attend elementary schools. Secondary schools of different kinds were to be provided for older children according to ability. A new system of secondary schools had to be created secondary intermediate schools - to train children beyond the age of 11-plus for whom Grammar school training was thought unsuited. Secondary schools, by virtue of their size and resources, could not be scattered around the countryside as much as primary schools, thus arguing for greater centralization and consistency in standards in the Technical Secondary schools usually did not take educational system. children until the age of 13-plus. Hence, some children left Primary schools at 11-plus and continued from Intermediate to Technical schools at 13-plus. The Government of the day did not endeavour to reconstruct the secondary school system on comprehensive lines. Had it done so, many with vested interests in voluntary / grammar schools would have objected and probably withdrawn to fully self-supporting positions. The Government did, however, encourage experiments in secondary school organization to reduce the importance of selection at ll-plus. Schools in certain areas were encouraged to reorganise themselves on a nonselective basis and non-selective schools were proposed for new housing areas. Some Intermediate schools introduced academic courses leading to the G.C.E. examination and achieved results which cast doubt upon the method of selection at 11-plus.

The Education Act of 1947 has been kept under review and a major amendment was introduced in 1968 which made provision for a new category of schools - maintained schools. Such schools are voluntary primary, secondary (intermediate), and special schools managed by statutory committees consisting of not less than six members, of whom two-thirds represent the former managers, and one-third the local education authority. Maintained schools qualify for a grant of 80 per cent towards the cost of approved building and alterations instead of the previous 65 per cent grant. The local education authority is also responsible for the maintenance and equipment of such schools. The 80 per cent building grant is also payable to voluntary Grammar schools which accept that one-third of their board of governors be appointed by the Minister of Education.

Catholic reactions to the Maintained schools and 80 per cent grant varied. They were seen by the Catholic Bishop of Down and Connor, Dr William Philbin, as "an invasion of the established system of Catholic school management." The Catholic Primate of all Ireland, Cardinal William Conway, found some of the proposals of the White Paper preceding the Act very acceptable, but was concerned over the powers the Act intended giving the local education authorities, commenting that, "If they treat us unfairly in such matters as housing, as many of them do, may they not do the same with our schools."

The Bill, when published, contained the concession that schools accepting "maintained" status would be free to revert to the purely voluntary system if former managers gave two years' notice of change, and made appropriate repayments to offset additional assistance they had received. The Catholic bishops agreed to give the new system a "... fair trial ... in the interests of harmony and goodwill." The Irish National Teachers' Organisation were satisfied that the position of Catholic schools could be safeguarded by the central Government and supported the proposals for reform.

, + <u>·</u> · · · · · ·

15 6 8 \* 5 ×

|                | Pupils               |
|----------------|----------------------|
|                | ι <sup>μ</sup> Φ,    |
| 624            | <sup>~</sup> 111,004 |
| e - <b>118</b> | 58,829               |
|                |                      |
| 382            | 69,683               |
| 79             | 34,848               |
| · · · · · ·    | £s <b>à</b> f°∢      |
| 210            | 31,372               |
| . 68           | , 42, 992            |
|                | 382<br>79            |

م ريسي <sup>4</sup>هر دير ا در مورد اور دير ا Table II.1: Primary and Secondary Schools and Pupils by Management Type : January 1971

Har Ara

- パート キャッチションがある 一方本人

The population of Northern Ireland consists of approximately 63 per cent Protestants, 35 per cent Catholics and two per cent either not Christian, or not willing to state their religion. Under the age of fifteen years, however, the religious populations are more evenly balanced: 57 per cent Protestant and 43 per cent Catholic. (Northern Ireland Census 1961). This presents the problem of Protestants being eventually outbred in Northern Ireland, but the higher Catholic emigration rate has kept Protestants in a firm majority since the beginthe second se \* e<sup>st</sup> . . . ning of the regime.

a the second One of the most enduring, widespread, and topical disputes arising from the political history of education in Northern Ireland \*\*\*\* concerns educating Protestants and Catholics in the same schools. Integrated, non-religious education, the stated policy of the first education bill in Northern Ireland, is not a Catholic-Protestant divide alone, since many Protestants hold firmly that their children

should be educated by those who wish to maintain a Protestant tradition as the dominant way of life in Ulster. And not all Catholics proclaim themselves against allowing their children to attend the same schools as Protestants. But as one Catholic couple said, "We would like to send our children to integrated schools but some of the Protestants are against us and the children might suffer." The issue, however, is emotionally explosive, and is capable of arousing people with little experience of Northern Ireland to make sweeping and absolute statements about the presumed evils of segregated education.

The most common arguments for integrated education have been those from economy, effectiveness, and ecumenism. The economic debate generally hinges on the unnecessary costs to taxpayers through the duplication of schools. The argument may sometimes be a genuine economic debate about the optimum size of schools, but it often contains overtones about "Rome on the Rates". Some reply that it is difficult to see what real saving would be effected by abolishing denominational schools. .... The total number of children requiring education would remain the same no matter which schools they attended: there would be no -saving in teachers! salaries; nor would there be great cut-backs in building costs since the building price is calculated by the number likely to be on the roll: so much per square foot per child. Catholics, arguing against the "Rome on the Rates" accusation reply that they are also taxpayers and, as such, along with others, support educa-It is hard to deny however, that a school with a common campus tion. and many shared educational facilities would avoid some duplication in subjects which require the most expensive equipment and offer fewest opportunities for "preaching" e.g. physics.

#### Ch.II - p.26

The argument against denomination schools from effectiveness is sometimes linked to the shortage of teachers in some schools leading to overcrowding and lowering of standards. Against this the voluntarists of different religions have replied that abolishing their schools would not change the number of pupils requiring education or the number of teachers prepared to give it. If the pupil/staff ratio in the best staffed schools were to apply all round more teachers would be required.

Arguments for mixed religious schools from ecumenism have ranged from seeing integration as a cure for all social ills to being helpful in creating better understanding between religious communities. But so few in Northern Ireland have experienced integrated education. David Watson writes:

> We started school at nine o'clock when the master blew his whistle. The Catholics went off to a different room for religion and we had to go to our own room. But that was all, because after this we used to share desks and play together and go home. 19

But he was one of a small minority in Northern Ireland. The Loyalty adult survey found that while attendance at mixed schools in Northern Ireland tended to reduce extreme views it does so to only a very limited extent.<sup>20</sup> Those attending technical schools experience integrated education after years of separate schooling, and some attending university in Northern Ireland comment on the tendency for religious/political groupings to polarize.

The more extreme case against segregated education is illustrated in a section of Orangeism: A New Historical Appreciation:

> Education will always be a thorny problem in the Province, for no single thing has contributed more to disharmony among the people. The Roman Catholic policy of strict educational apartheid has produced a ghetto mentality among her people to give them a prescribed outlook on

life generally and community life particularly. Nowhere is discrimination more apparent and its effect more obvious. No study of Irish history can begin until this primary fact is appreciated. 21

Elsewhere, disorder in Northern Ireland has been ascribed to segregated education:

> ... The Provisionals have all been brought up in schools where a United Ireland is regarded as the only natural solution and forget that Protestants have been brought up in schools where a United Ireland is regarded as highly unnatural, unnatural enough to shoot and burn about. They did it in the 1920s and the 1930s and again in 1969.... 22

The faith that keeping children and young people of different religions in separate educational establishments is a major cause of community divisions in Northern Ireland is widely preached. Integrated education has been advocated by such bodies as the Ulster Teachers Union (mainly Protestant), the Irish National Teachers' Organisation (I.N.T.O) (mainly Catholic), The National Council of Civil Liberties, and the Northern Ireland Civil Rights Association. Underlying some arguments that integrated education will heal community divisions is the belief that bigotry is bred in the schools. Another assumption is that simply separating children at an early age will be a divisive factor in community relations whether or not the schools manifestly inculcate suspicions about the 'others'.

Some educationalists maintain that teachers should start knowing the social experience of their children and reflect this back to them as something valid and significant for their development.<sup>23</sup> Many of the seven year old children I interviewed during pilot studies had a clear grasp of the emotive symbolism that makes attacking political enemies justifiable. I found it hard to believe that the majority of teachers I met explicitly reflected this back to the school-

# boys. Barrit and Carter write:

... Obviously there is no way of drawing up a fair account; but on balance it is very likely that the teaching profession, composed of educated and reasonable men and women, is an influence against bitterness rather than a stimulant of it.... 24

The separation of children at an early age occurs where Protestants and Catholics have lived and played together before school age. But in a great many cases going to separate schools is simply a continuation of the only life many children have already experienced on segregated housing estates and city streets. Moreover, such separation as does exist is intended to create differences between persons thought important to the communities and/or churches concerned. Whether simply attending one religion schools creates embittered community relations which would not otherwise have existed is difficult to investigate.

The largest survey of this problem was conducted by Andrew M. Greely and Peter H. Rossi in <u>The Education of Catholic Americans</u>. One of the questions they studied was that Catholic schools "... restrict interaction between Catholics and adults of other religious faiths, that they lead Catholics to non-involvement in community activities, that they develop rigid and intolerant attitudes...." Their findings from a large nation-wide survey of American Catholics revealed that:

> We could find no evidence that the products of such a separate system were less involved in community activities, less likely to have friends from other religious groups, more intolerant in their attitudes, or less likely to achieve either occupationally or academically. On the contrary we found they were slightly more successful in the world of study and work and, after the breaking point of college, much more tolerant.... ...There is no trace of divisive influence. Catholicschool Catholics are just as likely to be interested in community affairs and to have non-Catholic visitors, friends, neighbours and co-workers as are public school Catholics....

... Are Catholic school Catholics more rigid and intolerant than those (Catholics) who did not go to Catholic schools? The answer once again is negative. Catholic-school Catholics are actually more tolerant with regard to civil liberties and are no more anti-Negro, anti-Semitic, or anti-Protestant. 25

One of the less extreme views of the results of integrated education is that it would not heal all the major divisions in society, but would help alleviate some of them. One writer suggests that, "It is easy for those of us who have had the advantage of a liberal education and tolerant home background to claim that schools have little to do with overcoming prejudice. How are those who live in segregated back streets, who attend segregated schools, and live separate lives to overcome their blind bigotry if the schools do not attempt?"<sup>26</sup> It is further suggested that integration at community and employment level is much harder than at school. "Desegregate the schools, however, and people on both sides will more readily question segregation in jobs and houses."<sup>27</sup>

Whether the segregation of schools is seen as a major cause of bitterness in Northern Ireland or as a feature which, if removed, would ease community relations, does not diminish the obstacles one has to face in school integration. One's faith in the results of integrated education, however, gives a perspective upon the obstacles. One difficulty on the way to an integrated system involves appointing numbers of Catholic teachers to County schools. This could involve changes in the constitutions of school management committees which have important rights in the appointment of teachers. Perhaps some amended legislation would be necessary to ensure that a sufficient number of Catholic teachers were transferred. On the other hand, would the Catholic Church accept an influx of Protestants to their schools if this involved a lowering

of the "religious atmosphere".

In their pamphlet Educational Administration in Northern Ireland the Irish National Teachers' Organisation suggest that before integrated education could be attempted:

There would need to be a substantial period of impartial central and local administration before Catholic teachers would consider such a change. Their apprehensions about the possibility of partisan administration are supported by experience in the field of Further Education. This is one area where a system of integrated education operates, yet only two of the 32 principals are Catholics and both of these teachers were appointed by regional education committees. 28

Even if these obstacles could be overcome school teachers themselves are products of a segregated educational system. Although many secondary teachers probably shared a common education with those of another religion at university, most teachers who went from school to education colleges were completely segregated. (Protestants and Catholics attend separate Colleges of Education in Ulster). Membership of teachers' unions also serve to separate schoolteachers in a divided country. About a quarter of teachers in Northern Ireland belong to the Irish National Teachers' Organisation. It is an all-Ireland body with headquarters in Dublin. It has a predominantly Catholic membership and is associated mainly with the voluntary primary schools. A second quarter belongs to the Ulster Teachers' Union. They formed a breakaway from the INTO and are entirely Protestant. Their slogan - "An Ulster Union for Ulster Teachers." The Union is associated mainly with the County primary schools. The National Association of Schoolmasters and the Union of Women Teachers have a joint agreement on matters of common They constitute about one-quarter of teachers in Ulster and interest. have an integrated membership. The remainder of teachers belong to smaller bodies such as The Assistant Masters' Association, the Association of Assistant Mistresses, the Association of Head Teachers in Secondary Schools, and to no union. Among the smaller bodies there is some association across religious lines and some segregation. The sectarian picture of teachers' unions is broadly one of about half the teachers in Ulster who have some experience of accommodation with the "other" religion in school matters; the other half, in Primary schools, may have gone from school to teachers' training colleges and segregated teachers' unions. Any attempts to integrate education in Ulster would have to consider the separate experience of schoolteachers who would be required to make the system work.

The compliance of parents must be presumed before a system of integrated education could function since they, under the influence of whatever guidance they value, must make the final decision. Would Protestant parents want their children to come under the discipline of Catholic nuns and Christian Brothers? Would Catholic parents feel at ease if their children had to listen to the views of an avowed Orangeman? Probably a central issue to be struck in any state attempt to integrate education would be the rights of parents. The Universal Declaration of Human Rights, 1948, article 26, number 3- signed by the United Kingdom declares:

> Parents have a prior right to choose the kind of education that shall be given to their children.

The Catholic Church insists that it is the duty of Catholic parents to ensure a continuation of Catholic education for their children of schoolage. A Catholic seeking integrated education may find himself stigmatised (by the Church) as less than a good Catholic. Protestants, whilst not under the same institutionalised pressure to build church schools,

may be unhappy if integrated education were introduced tomorrow.

Two inter-related problems involved in integrated education in Ulster are the voluntary school tradition and suitable compensation for voluntary schools taken over by the state. Voluntary Grammar schools, both Protestant and Catholic, have a long tradition in Ulster. Such schools are strong, have influential middle class backing, and cannot be ignored as a small minority of schools. About three-quarters of the 45,000 grammar school places in Northern Ireland are still in voluntary schools. Such schools with extensive properties in buildings and land would doubtless demand massive compensation from the state if integrated education involved their demise.

Integrated education would be beset by the problem of transporting, or "bussing", pupils from their neighbourhood religious school to the integrated school of another area. Two-way traffic would be necessary if only to make room for one another. Given the community nature of many schools in segregated housing estates should the community school be destroyed to make way for integrated education? And would the "bussing" of pupils in Ulster cause political reactions similar to those in America?

The first Government of Northern Ireland indicated that they wanted to keep Protestants and Catholics together in the schools. To accomplish this end they introduced a non-religious scheme of education which failed abyssmally because the churches opposed the "secularization" of the system, and wanted a programme of Christian education in the schools which would satisfy them that they were promoting the essentials of the Christian faith. The two main problems concerning what is essential in Christian education, which split Catholics and Protestants, concern (1) non-denominational bible teaching and (2) the separation of

religion and secular subjects in the school curriculum. . The crux of the problem of non-denominational bible teaching is that one denomination (the Catholic Church) regards its own particular teaching as essential, and bible teaching insufficient, for the realization of Christian character. The Protestant Churches have generally been able to agree to some form of common school Christianity based upon bible instruction. Protestant agreement has not been total, but disagreements have been kept within school limits so long as no denomination sought to impose their particular tenets upon children of another faith, or none. Because the Protestants have a more or less "common Christianity" syllabus for the schools the Catholic Church has been regarded as standing outside the State system due to its insistence upon teaching its own particular tenets. 

The Catholic position appears to be the more complicated one regarding religious education in schools. The theological basis for the Catholic position regarding the importance of their own teaching rests on the belief that Christianity is a continuing revelation expressed, mainly, through the Catholic Church. The Canon Law reads:

> Parents have a most serious duty to secure a fully Catholic education for their children in all that concerns the instruction of their minds, the training of their wills to virtue, their bodily welfare and the preparation of their life as citizens.

All the Faithful shall be so educated from childhood, that not only shall nothing contrary to the Catholic religion and good morals be taught them, but religious and moral education shall have the principal place....

Catholic pupils are not to frequent non-Catholic schools or neutral schools or schools that are open also to non-Catholics. Only the Ordinary of the place where the school is situated is competent to determine, according to the instructions of the Apostolic See, in what circumstances it may be tolerated for Catholics to attend such schools and what safeguards are to be prescribed against the danger of perversion.... 29 The Canon Law introduces another legislature whose effect is real and visible upon the behaviour of some citizens. The conflict between the law of the land and Church goes back to the Two Swords of Pope Gelasius I. This doctrine implied a dual organization and control of human society in the interests of two classes of valuess spiritual and temporal. Between the representatives of these classes, the clergy and the civil officials, co-operation was more likely where the Church was as universal as the Empire. But in a country where political and religious divisions follow similar lines, the flags honoured by religious congregations, and their schools, raise the questions whose country is this? Thus, spiritual interests reinforce temporal conflict in Northern Ireland.

The Second Vatican Council affirmed the duty of Catholic parents to send their children to Catholic schools, when and where possible, e.g. not mandatory for salvation. In his booklet <u>Catholic Schools</u>, Cardinal Conway quotes an extract from a pastoral letter issued by Cardinal Fringe of Cologne (generally regarded as a liberal bishop) some time after the council:

> The Catholic school gives to teachers possibilities of upbringing that only a Church school is able to give. Here Catholic children are brought up by Catholic teachers in the spirit of the Catholic faith. Here the children receive not only a grounding in the catechism, but the whole atmosphere of the school can convey the stamp of faith.... If you have children that are to be enrolled in school during these weeks, then enroll them in a Catholic school.... Don't be led astray into transferring your children from the Catholic school to another type of school, just because here and there the school building is nicer or the way there a bit shorter. 30

The position of the Catholic priest in the Catholic school system is to act for the Catholic Church. This is part of his priestly ministry. Thus, for Catholic schools to become state schools, using a "common Christianity" syllabus, they would have to disregard many teachings peculiar to themselves which they regard as essential for the religious and moral development of children. Catholics must be denominational to be Catholics whilst Protestants can be inter-Protestant-denominational in their teachings and remain true to the essentials of the faith. This only underlies that the divisions set up at the Protestant Reformation are still clearly visible in modern schools. But to this it may be replied that in integrated State schools children could be divided into denominational groups for religious instruction with as many ministers, priests, pastors and missionaries as there were churches and mission halls represented in the school. Such a provision, however, stumbles over another basic question which separates Protestants and Catholics - the division of the school day into divine and profane categories.

Protestants have never been entirely happy about the separation of religious and secular subjects in the school curriculum, but have managed to preserve a Reformed Front in school religious education. So much of the history and literature of Northern Ireland concerns religion that it has been a difficult subject to contain in classes specially designed for it. In one sense all education in Ulster is religious education since the congregations are almost entirely of one faith and culture. In another sense, secular subjects are sometimes taught in a nonreligious atmosphere in so far as God and the Church do not figure largely in mathematics lessons. Nevertheless, due to the prominence given to religion in Ulster schools the religious interpretation of all subjects is indirectly encouraged. Whilst Protestants can pay lip service to the ideal of separate religious and secular instruction Catholics do not accept the principle of separation. The Catholic school is thought of as a continuation of the Catholic home and Catholic Church, where each school creates its own atmosphere in imperceptible ways which permeate the entire school day. Cardinal Conway wrote:

> Probably the most important factor in preserving this "religious atmosphere" of the school is the attitude towards religion of the teachers. Their faith, or unfaith, will breathe into the air of the school. 31

Probably many Catholics simply do not believe that County schools actually contain religious instruction to classes specially designed for it. And Protestants may believe that Catholics say a "Hail Mary" after each calculation or sentence. Until Protestants and Catholics can find some areas of agreement on this basic question, integrated education, which supports Christian ideals, is unlikely.

One question that is being asked with increasing anxiety is whether or not the principle of combined literary and religious education is being carried out effectively in Catholic schools. In other words, are Catholic schools really effective in promoting the Catholic faith among those who attend them? A Report by the Catholic Renewal Movement in England and Wales suggests, among other things, that exposure to education in some Catholic schools can weaken faith and dull moral awareness. It also says that Catholic schools demand docility rather than inquiry, and conformity rather than creativity.<sup>32</sup> One writer suggests that the Catholic school is the major way by which a Catholic parish legitimises itself. Any failure at the school level reflects itself at the parish level where Catholics are failing in their function as a worshipping community.<sup>33</sup> A similar vein can be found in Greely and Rossi where they find the success of the Catholic school in promoting the Catholic faith largely dependent upon the religious back-

# ground of the pupils. They write:

In answer to the question, "Have Catholic schools worked?" we might respond that they have worked very well for those who would already be part of the religious elite; they have not worked so well for those whose religious backgrounds were less intense, and, apparently, Catholics who have not attended them have not been appreciably harmed by nonattendance. 34

The separate education of some Catholics and Protestants is meant to continue religious differences thought important since the Protestant Reformation. Separate schools for Protestants and Catholics may not have been very successful in educating better Christians. On the other hand, separate education may be useful in promoting differences in approach to the events of 1690 and 1916 in Ireland. This is a plausible presumption. If the communities in Ulster can elect representatives who will pass legislation making way for integrated education this will be some indication that political differences are being brought within a system of generally acknowledged rules. In such an event integrated education may be unnecessary to heal divisions between adult communities which are co-operating over a basic problem. This may be a suggestion that integrated education has been a "red-herring" to draw the attention of the observer away from the political level where discord exists. Many may follow this "holy grail" in the hope of community harmony. Others may be satisfied that so many have blamed segregated education for political divisions thus diverting attack from the central decision makers.

The greater the State management in a school the greater the financial assistance the school receives from public funds. Reciprocally, if a school expects higher financial assistance from the state it must also be prepared for fuller state representation upon its management

committee. Many Protestants have resented State support for Catholic schools, in particular, on a number of counts: they (the Protestants) have transferred their own schools to public control without financial compensation and now see public aid to Catholic, and other voluntary, schools climbing still higher; they have sought to safeguard the Protestant faith through the County schools, and have come under attack on numerous occasions for this, whilst the Catholic faith is taught freely in the Catholic schools; they resent the payment of salaries to priests, Christian Brothers and nuns, who teach in school, seeing this as an endowment, out of public funds, to the Catholic Church, amounting, according to some, to a theft of taxpayers money; they fear the Catholic teachers do not inculcate loyalty to the State, but teach Republicanism which, according to some, amounts to treason. Some Protestants suggest that since State schools are for all, all should attend, and failure to do so is to sabotage the duly constituted Government.

School voluntarists have replied that public schools are for those who might be satisfied with the subject matter they teach and the way they teach it. Catholics, in particular, have argued that if, for the sake of unity, their schools are to be disregarded, the state has no right to claim to be a democracy and that the liberty of even political parties will soon be forbidden. They also claim that by teaching love of God and neighbour their instruction is unifying and not divisive. Probably the most fundamental thrust of their argument is that education primarily belongs to the family and not to the State. Thus, when voluntary schools ask for State aid their demands are just since they undertake the literary and scientific instruction of the children of taxpayers.

Those who are involved in the voluntary schools of Ulster, either

as teachers or parents, are in great need of assistance from public monies to keep up with post-war educational expansion. The expansion and expenditure has occurred in two waves. The first in the late '40s following the Butler Education Act; the second from the late '60s onwards following the great increase in Secondary education. Catholics, in particular, fear that the increase in public representation that goes with increased state aid will involve an increase in Protestant power. For instance, the Northern Ireland Education Acts provided that the powers and duties of a local education authority should be exercised through an education committee constituted in accordance with a scheme approved by the Ministry of Education. Catholics formed, as one would expect. a minority of the total membership of such education committees. One particular anxiety arising from this was that local education committees would discriminate against the Catholic community in the appointments of non-teaching staff. Civil rights workers alleged, in 1969, that out of 77 persons employed in a salaried capacity in one local education committee headquarters only one was a Catholic. 35 The Protestant imbalance in local education authorities also aroused the fear that the Association of Education Committees in Ulster, which had considerable influence in educational policy, would be very disproportionately Protestant. "The total number of representatives appointed for the year 1968/9 was 62, of whom three were Catholics."<sup>36</sup> Other Catholic anxieties in school management included Central Committee appointments to the Inspectorate, which have been disproportionately Protestant, and prohibitions in the use of certain school history texts which may be thought valuable by Catholic educators.

The chairman of the Association of Teachers in Technical Institutions indicated that he thought the mixing of Protestants and Catholics in the same schools insufficient as an educational ideal in Northern Ireland. "... the non-sectarian, non-selective and coeducational nature of further education could be one of the most effective weapons available for forging a new and integrated society in Ulster."<sup>37</sup> Non-selective education means comprehensive schooling: a merging of Grammar and Intermediate (Secondary Modern) Schools.

The major difference between the 1944 Education Act in England and Wales and the 1947 Education Act in Northern Ireland was fee paying in Grammar schools in Ulster. Children who failed the ll-plus could attend Grammar school if their parents could afford the fees. The voluntary Grammar school received assistance from public funds if 80 per cent of places were reserved for those receiving state scholarships. The remaining 20 per cent could be available for non-scholarship children whose parents could afford the fees.

The main cause of the difference between the 1944 and 1947 Education Acts was that whilst in England and Wales a large majority of existing Secondary schools were maintained by the State, in Ulster only nine out of 75 were in this position. The Northern Ireland Government could either build a tri-partite system - primary, intermediate, grammar - themselves, or work with the already existing Grammar schools and create new Secondary Intermediate schools. They opted for the second policy giving a 65 per cent grant to voluntary Grammar schools for certain purposes, paying the teachers' salaries, and allowing them to obtain the remaining finance from government scholarships and fees payed directly by parents.

The circumstances availing in the 1940s were against a policy of comprehensive education. But the subject continued to be raised from

. . . . .

time to time. In 1964 a White Paper on Educational Development in Northern Ireland (Cmd. 470) examined the arguments for and against comprehensive education and concluded:

> ... even if the Government took full powers to reconstruct the secondary school system on comprehensive lines irrespective of established interests or opinions, the actual size and location of many existing school premises would present formidable difficulties.

Such a proposal would moreover be certain to arouse strong opposition. Some voluntary grammar schools might, indeed, claim the right to secede from the grant aided educational system and to operate as independent schools wholly dependent on fees, which would of course have to be very much higher than they are now. This would set up a social cleavage within the Northern Ireland educational system such as it has never known before.

Given, therefore, the facts of the existing situation and the disruption, expense, restriction of parental choice and ill-feeling which would be caused by an imposed system of comprehensive schools, the Government is satisfied that it would be wrong to make a complete change in the pattern of secondary education established under the 1947 Act. 38

In 1973, a Report of the Advisory Council for Education in Northern Ireland on the Reorganisation of Secondary Education recommended (with three members dissenting) that the Minister of State make now a declaration of intent to eliminate selection at 11-plus as soon as possible through the restructuring of the educational system, <sup>39</sup> and the minister responsible for education, Mr. William Van Straubenzee, promised to consult with those most concerned.

One argument against selection at the age of ll-plus has been from equality. The middle-class child who fails to clamber over the selection fence at ll-plus is often to be seen entering the Grammar school course, through his parents' payments, despite his lack of ability and aptitude for the studies to be pursued. It is also contended that the separation of children into different types of schools at ll-plus causes a social class division in society. This can lead, it is sometimes thought, to viewing society in terms of two-class-conflict rather than seeing persons of all social status engaged in a co-operative effort for the improvement of life in general. Also, working class boys are frequently thought of as being more socially violent. Recently, newspapers have devoted many columns to violence in schools and to disorder in school playgrounds. It has also been suggested that many teachers in secondary modern schools in working class areas see their function as the containment of the violence of the future unemployed. Comprehensive education has been urged on the grounds that mixing by social class would reduce violent tendencies in some children as well as creating job aspirations among those who find little employment incentive in their homes.

Perhaps one reason why comprehensive education is difficult to implement in Northern Ireland is because religious issues have repeatedly clouded social class disputes and rendered them of secondary importance. One cannot read the political history of education in Ulster without being impressed by the number of occasions, and the intensity of feeling, with which religious/political issues have divided educators since the foundation of the Northern State. Schools that differ by religion are supported by segregated churches and housing estates and by a whole complex of non-reciprocated values within separate communities. One purpose of later chapters will be to investigate school and community influences and the possible effect they may have upon schoolboy civic learning. The school does not exist in an academic campus: neither does its pupils come and go from its confines, and attend to its lessons, without following community trails.

1.0

. . .

ана на село се **н**а

Footnotes: Chapter II

1. See Stanley Rothman, "The Politics of Catholic Parochial Schools: An Historical and Comparative Analysis", The Journal of Politics, Vol.25, 1963, p. 49.

is a construction of the second se

۰.

- 2. See James Murphy, Church, State, and Schools in Britain, 1900-1970, (R.K.P. London, 1971), pp. 2-3.
- 3. See E.R. Norman, The Conscience of the State in North America, (Cambridge University Press, 1968).
- 4. Ibid., Chapter I, pp. 20-21.
- 5. Quoted in Dennis P. Barrit and Charles F. Carter, The Northern Ireland Problem, (Oxford University Press, 1972) p. 78.
- 6. Interim Report of the Departmental Committee on the Educational Services in Northern Ireland (Cmd.6.1922); and Final Report of the Departmental Committee on the Educational Services in Northern Ireland (Cmd.15, 1923); reports of the Lynn committee.
- 7. D.H. Akenson, Education and Enmity: The Control of Schooling in Northern Ireland 1920-50, (David and Charles: Newton Abbot/Barnes and Noble Books: New York, 1973) pp. 52-53.
- 8. Ibid., p. 58.
- 9. Ibid., p. 66. and the start for the start of the start
- 10. J.J. Campbell, Catholic Schools: A Survey of a Northern Ireland Problem, (obtainable from author, Institute of Education, Queens University of Belfast, 1963) pp. 11-12.
- 11. William Corkey, Episode in the History of Protestant Ulster, 1923-47 (Printed privately: Belfast, n.d.).
- 12. M.W. Dewar et al., Orangeism, A New Historical Approach, (Grand Orange Lodge of Ireland, 1967), p. 178.
- 13. Quoted in Educational Administration in Northern Ireland (I.N.T.O. September, 1969), p. 5.
- 14. See Dewar et al., op. cit., pp. 178-80.
- 15. Irish News, 22 Feb 1930.
- 16. See Public Education: Northern Ireland, (H.M.S.O., Belfast, 1970) pp. 10-11.

17. Educational Reconstruction in Northern Ireland, (Cmd.226, 1944).

18. "Statements of the Bishops on Educational Reconstruction in Northern Ireland", <u>Irish Ecclesiastical Record</u>, 5 series, vol LIX, no 5 (May, 1945), p. 351.

- 19. See "My School" by David Watson, Belfast Telegraph, May 8 1972.
- 20. See Richard Rose, Governing Without Consensus, p. 337
- 21. Dewar et al., op. cit., pp. 184-85.
- 22. "Provo Policy", Fortnight, Dec 15 1971.
- 23. See Basil Bernstein, "Education and Society", New Society, Feb 26 1970.
- 24. Barrit and Carter, op. cit., p. 92.
- 25. Andrew M. Greely and Peter H. Rossi, The Education of Catholic Americans, (Aldine Publishing Company: Chicago, 1966), passim.
- 26. Victor Blease, "The Case of Further Integration in Education", Sunday News, 11 April 1971.
- 27. Ibid.
- 28. Educational Administration in Northern Ireland, op. cit., pp. 12-13.
- 29. From Canons 1113, 1372, and 1374.
- 30. Pastoral Letter issued by Cardinal Fringe of Cologne, 10 August 1966.
- 31. Cardinal Conway, Catholic Schools, (Veritas, 1971) p. 9.
- 32. The Future of Catholic Education in England and Wales, (The (The Catholic Renewal Movement: Watford) 1971.
- 33. George Elford, "School Crisis or Parish Crisis", Commonweal, January 29 1971.
- 34. Greely and Rossi, op. cit., p. 113.
- 35. "Civil Rights Workers Present Another Payroll List", <u>Ulster</u> <u>Herald</u>, 16 August 1969.
- 36. Educational Administration in Northern Ireland, op. cit., p.10.
- 37. "Education Key to a new Ulster", Belfast Telegraph, 14 Feb. 1972.
- 38. Educational Development in Northern Ireland, Cmd. 470, 1964.
- 39. <u>Reorganisation of Secondary Education in Northern Ireland</u>. A Report of the Advisory Council for Education in Northern Ireland. (Cmd. 574. 1973).

### Chapter III

## Fieldwork: Strategies and Hazards

÷ 1

... Northern Ireland has suffered from an overdose of snap judgements reached by so called experts at the price of a 50 pence taxi ride around a few of -the trouble spots of Belfast... 1

My first-hand experience of Northern Ireland and its peoples began in 1956 and is not limited to Belfast during the troubles. Thus most of my memories of Northern Ireland are pleasant ones. After having lived cheek by jowl with a few Antrim lads for almost three years, and having married a girl from the County Down about fourteen years ago, I begin to feel some of the Ulster arguments without being driven to take sides. For the past ten years I have spent some time each year in the Province and for the last three years my visits have become more exten-During fieldwork I visited and stayed for quite some time in a sive. number of major Provincial towns and covered the surrounding rural areas, thus building upon my experience of Ulster and its ways. My memories of Ulster are many and varied: peacetime and war; gladness and sorrow; hope and disillusionment. In this I have partially learned to appreciate the depths of the feelings in Ulster as well as beginning to understand some of the arguments.

The first part of fieldwork was conducted in August 1970 when three hundred boys and girls and young people were interviewed in small groups using open-ended techniques. The purpose of such interviews was to establish what sort of questions about civic learning could best be asked. In the light of their answers, and questions which arose from more formal testing, the questionnaires were revised five times. Out

a -

### Ch.III - p.2

of some 200 questions tested, 80 were selected for the Secondary School Survey and 60 for the Primary School Survey. The major Secondary school investigation commenced early in 1971 and continued until after the Easter vacation. The Primary school survey began in November 1971 when questions were tested among different age groups to discover when a child could handle the concept of Government and a paper-and-pencil questionnaire. The major survey (upon which this investigation is based) involved formal questionnaire interviews with three thousand boys (almost equal numbers of Catholics and Protestants). A total of 972 interviews were in Grammar schools, 946 in Secondary Intermediate schools (Secondary Modern), and 1,116 in Primary schools. The sample was designed so that respondents should be drawn from areas experiencing different disorder levels; changing religious proportions in school-catchment zones; town size should vary quite considerably; and children should reside East and West of the River Bann (the prosperous and less well developed areas of Ulster); near to and far from the Border.

Only boys were interviewed in the major administrations, partly because of time and financial problems, and partly because of the basic variables chosen for intestigation. For instance, most studies have revealed few differences by sex as far as evaluations of Government are concerned, and boys were thought to be more violence-prone than girls.\*

In the Secondary school fieldwork an equal number of Grammar and Intermediate schools were chosen in order to uncover differences which might exist between Grammar schoolboys and others. The Secondary school years selected were First and Fourth. The Primary School years chosen

\* Additional reasons for concentrating upon boys only are given in Appendix I.

were primary Four and primary Six. Certain school years had to be selected because it was impossible to cover every school year within the time available. Spreading the sampling framework over eight years allows time for political development. Including the Fourth year in some Secondary schools almost certainly involved interviewing some boys who were actively engaged, whatever their motivations, in violence.

In all, children from approximately forty schools completed a questionnaire. From the beginning of the first pilot study, through preliminary testing, to the end of the major Primary Survey, approximately 3,800 children and young people were contacted. Whilst this is not a scientifically random sample it is much more representative of schoolboys in Ulster than American samples have been of children there. Not only is the sample size proportionately much larger, but an effort was also made to include middle and working class boys from districts which had experienced different levels of disorder and economic development. (See Appendix I.).

The general background to the survey was one of increasing violence and tensions a time when jokes about the 'troubles' became fewer and more unpopular. The first pilot studies began around the time when Protestants were attacking soldiers on the Shankill Road (late 1970). Schoolboys stoning the soldiers made use of the wind which blew tear gas in the opposite direction providing a screen for their activities and an irritant to unprotected soldiers. The major Secondary school Survey was conducted when riots were erupting frequently on the Falls Road (Catholic) and observers, like myself, were frequently detained for questioning by local vigilantes. In March 1971 three Scottish soldiers were found shot in a lonely lane outside Belfast. If this had not been so tragic it would have been amusing listening to the rumours and counterrumours which circulated in both communities. Halfway through the Secondary school survey the Prime Minister resigned and was replaced by Brian Faulkner. Towards the end of this part of fieldwork rioting broke out in East Belfast where the army opened fire upon a number of people marching through a police cordon. Four, including a twelve year old boy, were admitted to hospital. Thus, during the first survey both 'Government' and 'Disorder' were highly salient issues. But these were quiet days compared to the post-internment atmosphere.

Between the Primary and Secondary school surveys bombing of shops and Government property rose sharply as did the number of arms searches and shootings. But the major event, between surveys, was the introduction of Internment without trial. There was a violent reaction in Nationalist areas and in some streets people began to leave their homes at a more noticeable rate than before, some burning them as they left, lest they be occupied by those of the other religion who were fleeing for similar reasons. After internment was introduced, Belfast suffered extensive rioting and by night ten deaths occurred. Disorder spread throughout Northern Ireland that night to such places as Newry, Strabane and Derry. Few areas, if any, were completely unaffected as the two communities drifted further apart.

By the time the Primary school preliminary tests had begun in November 1971 the Campaign of Civil Disobedience was having widespread effect, some bombings of the civilian population had occurred, the Long Kesh (later known as the Maze Prison) internment camp had been opened, the members of the disbanded USC (or B Specials) had pledged themselves as a third force (unofficial) for the defence of Ulster, and the Border was being more tightly secured. After a certain stage of subjection to bombings and shootings violent events are not easily remembered

individually but each fades into a general background of violent col-Except where one has been personally involved, either directly ours. or through the involvement of a person known, the individual explosions are muffled into a general dull rumble of catastrophy. Thus it was during the Primary School Survey. People became more sceptical about the political situation and all efforts to bring the troubles to an end; school-teachers who had been fairly liberal a year before now became more hardened; it became much more difficult to talk to people. As one man on the Falls Road told me, "Six months ago we would have told you about this or that happening. Now we're out to get them before they get us .... I believe it's wrong to kill ... and we'll pray for forgiveness .... but that's how it is." Thus, during the Primary School Survey only the big events stand out in my mind such as 'Bloody Sunday' when 13 men were shot dead in Londonderry during a Civil Rights Rally. The next day many shops were closed, barricades were set up again in places where they had been earlier dismantled, and a number of schools shut down. The Prime Minister spoke of the period as one of "... mounting hysteria and unreason surrounding us on every side." In the midst of such "unreason" the Vanguard Loyalists continued holding semi-military rallies in various parts of the Province. Their leader, William Craig, declared that they were determined to preserve their British tradition and way of life and "God help those who get in our way for we mean business". Before the end of the Primary School Survey the bombings had spread to England where the army barracks at Aldershot were partly blown up. The Official IRA claimed responsibility. By the end of February violence turned to political assassinations when the Minister of State was shot in Armagh. In March, two large explosions in Belfast killed a number of civilians. Parked cars were being used as booby traps and one

could feel 'entirely safe' in few places, if any, in the Province. Speculation was rife regarding the imposition of Direct Rule from Westminster and interviewing continued in the Primary schools right up to the day when Westminster Rule was <u>announced</u> as imminent. Since this introduced a new Government for Ulster the Surveys were wound up. The Primary children interviewed lived through a disaster period when politics and violence were very salient to their civic learning.

As a frequent visitor to Northern Ireland I agree with Barry White where he writes, "There's one thing to be said for living in Northern Ireland. You really get to know yourself. Every week, every day, every hour of the day, your innermost emotions and beliefs are being forced out into the open and tested against the latest enormity, whether it's death, destruction, betrayal, brutality, dishonesty, arrogance or what have you...."2 Only one Provincial town in which fieldwork was conducted completely escaped physical violence, and even there one tended to quake a bit when passing a line of cars parked outside the town hall. Being stopped in City streets and asked to identify oneself became quite common during tense periods. Some questioners were more thorough than Thus, on oneoccasion, I was detained on the Falls Road until others. a few telephone calls could be made to "clear me". But such questioning was always preferable to being surrounded by a noisy gang of teenagers during a riot. It was only by appearing calm in such a situation that I managed to continue on my way with little trouble. Observers from outside Eire and the United Kingdom may be regarded as neutral, but a Scotsman in Ulster was expected to take sides: either side according to the circumstances. Even within the precincts of a school one could not feel completely removed from the violence. For instance, during the early part of fieldwork, I was asked to help the teachers

search a school for a bomb. Bomb scares were taken more seriously later. On another occasion I alighted from a bus behind a schoolboy (approximately 15 years old) who proceeded to hijack the bus by threatening the driver with a gun. The bus was later burned and used as a barricade. Soon afterwards parents began entering the schools in order to get their children behind the barricades before the rumoured attack began. Nor was it unusual to be questioned by soldiers before entering a school especially when carrying a bag full of questionnaires, or to find soldiers searching the school during survey work. But such events, within some schools, became regular occurrences for headmasters and schoolteachers in some parts of the Province. These personal experiences, however, helped me to see beyond the percentages on the computer printout into some of the feelings of Ulster people.

During the civil disturbances in Northern Ireland doctors in the Student Health Centre of Queen's University, Belfast, were worried by the marked increase in the incidence of mental illness among the staff and students.<sup>3</sup> Some schoolteachers I spoke to complained of nervous troubles and others of the difficulty of keeping a balanced view of affairs. Others spoke of the need for some institution to help them avoid being pulled into extreme views. There was a tendency among teachers, more marked than earlier, to speak in terms of "our people". But this was a fairly general pattern among people who tried to take a rational view of events. After passing through a period of 'gut' reaction and of being 'sucked into' the discord a time of clearer thinking returned. After a prolonged period in the 'field' I found myself passing through much the same phases. But the children I was interviewing live there The great majority of them seem to be taking the troubles all the time. in their stride and many appear to be enjoying them. Appearances,

however, may conceal deep emotional uncertainty. But, perhaps to many children in Northern Ireland, an explosion produces no more effect upon them than does the one o'clock gun upon children in Edinburgh.

Due to the speed with which I endeavoured to carry out these surveys there was no time to first approach a school principal by mail, wait for a reply, and then visit him on an approved date. Instead, I relied upon having good sponsorship for the surveys and upon friendship networks. By these methods I could arrive in, for example, a Provincial town, and visit all the school principals in two days. Having the sponsorship of the Community Relations Commission helped, I believe, in gaining confidence. From the first school visited I relied upon the advice of the first headmaster interviewed who generally supplied me with enough introductions to get round another few schools. After two or three days of setting up times for questionnaire interviews in the schools, the actual interviewing could be carried out within another five or six days. This generally involved staying in the Provincial town over the weekend, thus providing more qualitative experience.

Receiving permission from a school principal to carry out fieldwork in his/her school presented fewer difficulties than I had anticipated. The general pattern was ease of access to schools, school classes, and smaller groups, and immense co-operation from most school principals and teachers. There were a number of cases, however, when a number of objections were made to this kind of research being carried out in schools.

The most frequent objection encountered from principals was that parents may not wish their children to answer political questions. Although no effort was made to connect individual boys with their families
## Ch.III - p.9

it was pointed out, on a number of occasions, that some parents would not appreciate this, feeling that there was a "sinister" motive behind That this happened was borne out on a number of occasions the surveys. when parents later approached the school principal concerned. One headmaster had to face a deputation of parents. Most of their complaints could be dealt with fairly easily by the headmaster as they were based upon misconceptions which could be quickly cleared up. One parental complaint arose out of a boy's tale that he had been locked in a room and told that what took place was a secret. Whilst there was no question of locking boys in a schoolroom they had been told that any information they imparted could be a secret if they so wished. Thus, it is essential that the schoolmaster be fully briefed regarding procedure, and the nature of the questions, in order to be equipped to deal with any complaints which may arise later. This not only protects the interviewer and the principal, but makes it all the more likely that the principal will trust the interviewer and leave him/her alone to carry out the administrations.

Another objection raised by school principals was that some of the questions I was using could be destructive of community relations in Northern Ireland. In other words, it was suggested that the options available in certain survey questions could influence boys to consider courses of action which, otherwise, would never have been entertained. Whilst I seriously doubted the plausibility of this complaint it had to be taken seriously by pointing out that "peaceful" as well as "violent" options were available in a number of set responses: with the environment of the school to influence them boys could be induced to choose the peaceful course of action. In all, only one school approached refused to co-operate through fear of parental reaction, and three on the grounds that the survey could embitter community relations.

Once access had been gained to school classes, and smaller groups, the initial suspicions of schoolboys had to be overcome. Most schoolboys in Ulster feel that you have to "watch out" for other people or that it "depends" upon to whom one is talking. The "depends" usually means the religion of the other person. Thus, boys had to be persuaded that they could answer some incriminating questions without fear of repercussions. For instance, they were requested not to put their names on the questionnaires; to see that they were handed back in a random manner; tied in a bundle before their eyes. They were assured that on no account would the answers be shown to their headmasters and teachers. But, once this fear was dealt with, it was necessary to explain what would happen to answers since many boys did not see the point of taking part in the investigation. Others had to be persuaded that the survey was not the same as the census due to trouble over the 1971 Northern Ireland Census over which many, including some Catholic priests, had refused to co-operate with the State. The final, and by far the most effective ways of persuading the boys to take the questionnaire seriously was to tell them approximately how many boys they were representing and that an equal number of the other religion would be taking part. This last piece of information probably led to greater participation in order not to "let the side down", but also, on many occasions, to efforts to discover the religion of the interviewer.

One has to live for some time in Ulster to discover some of the more ingenious techniques for discovering "which foot someone digs with" (his religion). Not only are questions asked which can reveal this, but failure to answer other questions, can be a pointer, as can responses to certain statements. This hazard had to be dealt with on several occasions during fieldwork. Many schoolboys felt that they could 'tell' just by looking and had no need to descend to the more obvious techniques of which Glasgow soccer team I supported. A study of whether or not a person's religion could be identified by looking at his face revealed that, whilst neither religion was very successful in this, Catholics scored significantly above chance.<sup>4</sup> Since few are treated as impartial in Northern Ireland the degree of trust one receives depends to a great extent upon knowledge, not only of the traditions and theologies of different religions, but also the local manner of expressing them.

As indicated earlier the only two serious interruptions of questionnaire administration were when the school was cleared during a bomb acare and when parents entered the school classrooms in order to get their children behind the barricades. On only a very few occasions did schoolteachers attempt to walk among the school desks whilst the pupils were answering questions. Most of them probably believed they were helping in this way lest a boy find any difficulties. Nevertheless, simply telling the boys that all responses were given in secret was generally enough to have the desired effect of causing such teachers to come to the front of the room. On the great majority of cases no teacher was present whilst the boys were filling in the questionnaire. Since one question concerned what boys felt about British soldiers it was uncomfortable to have a soldier, who was on guard outside the school, standing beside an open window whilst the responses were being read. (One option was "Soldiers want to hurt people like me".).

The schools in Northern Ireland have generally been regarded by schoolteachers at least, as 'havens of peace' where children may be sheltered from the troubles and lead 'normal' lives in the midst of a distracted world. Thus, the political situation is rarely, if ever,

discussed in many Ulster schools. Being confronted with a questionnaire dealing mainly with political questions caused much excitement among boys, especially in the lower fourth form of some Intermediate schools in the more troubled areas. Many of these boys were almost certainly engaged in confrontations with the security forces. Others, who had been engaged in a school-strike after "Bloody Sunday" only a few days before interviews, tried to discover my reactions to their When excitement rose during interviews it was difficult to strike. suppress vocal answers to some questions. The threat that all questionnaires would be destroyed was sufficient to quieten most boys. One question, however, and the answers it received, made it quite obvious that the vocal response was no guide to how every boy felt. The question regarding what they would do if a riot broke out near their homes contained a 'join in' option. This generally received a vocal response which led me, at the time, to believe that every boy in Ulster was a rioter. Looking at the written answers later, however, revealed that the vocal response was a poor quide to written answers.

One emotional hazard an interviewer must face when administering a questionnaire of a social nature is the tension emanating from the class when community relations questions are put. Even reading out the question, 'I wouldn't mind if my sister or brother became a Catholic/Protestant. Do you agree or disagree?' produced a feeling of revulsion in most classes which the interviewer could quite surely feel. After having administered a particular questionnaire on some two-hundred occasions one would expect to be insulated emotionally against class reactions. Asking some questions in a violent atmosphere never became easy.

The open-ended pilot interviews were more interesting than the

### Ch.III - p.13

more formal parts of the surveys. In early pilot work both boys and girls were interviewed between the ages of seven and seventeen. I had known for years that Ulster adults were extremely argumentative. In September 1970 I found children and adolescents following a similar pattern. Heated arguments rather than discussions were the order of the day even among some of the younger children. Now even the level of argument appears to have died out somewhat as people either become thoroughly disinterested in politics or take up hard and fast positions which are only stated, but not open for debate. Although many of the small group interviews began very slowly the initiative was frequently taken out of the interviewer's hands as a religious and/or political argument developed between the various shades of Orange or Green. It was revealing to allow the course of events to follow their own momentum until eventually it floundered on whether one was for or against the Border, the Government, or the Link with Britain. As one boy said, "Some people are kicking the Constitution in Northern Ireland, not to make it work better /protest7 but to wreck it altogether." /disorder7. And another joined in, "Aye, but they don't know how tough it really is". Talking about the riots, a fourteen-year-old Catholic girl in Belfast gave her idea of what caused them, "Some boys riot just to burn off the excess energy they can't use on recreation grounds or in employment or in otherthings". Those on the other side of a riot were almost always seen as the enemy against which one was defending the people, "People on the other side of a riot are rubbishy, rotten animals, who think stupidly". To one 17-year-old Protestant boy democracy meant, "being forceful in carrying out the majority will", while to another boy in the same group it meant, "being fair". A 13-year-old boy thought that a citizen was "someone who could bring himself to report crimes to the police", whilst another young lad said he was "someone who drives around Belfast with a

a gun beside him". The authority of the Government was not rated very highly among boys and girls of both religions in late 1970. Protestants felt that the Government had little impact upon their daily lives and that it was not very important to do everything a Government said, especially if they banned a Protestant parade. A 13-year-old Catholic boy felt then that "Stormont will need Westminster to get them out of this mess", and that the "soldiers were all Protestants now". A 10-yearold Protestant boy expressed how he would influence the Government, "I'd hit them in the face and burn the Ormeau bakery and keep the trouble running". One nine-year-old boy revealed severe political-conflict imagery in his dream life where he saw MPs "falling off a mountain with a dagger stuck in their backs and then drowning in the River Laggan".

It was particularly difficult during this stage of fieldwork to avoid being caught up in the current political myths which cropped up again and again in almost every group of children. The hard and fast positions witnessed in adults was beginning to form in seven-year-old children who referred to "Proddy Dogs" and "Micks" with a suspicion and horror which indicated how deeply socialization patterns had been laid. It seems unlikely that the schools are responsible for producing such working conceptions of differences between religions at the age of seven. Such children have been exposed to seven years of family influence but only two years of school socialization. Considering that schools are, in the main, religious congregations, they are in a weak position to overcome, if indeed they should try to, community divisions. Furthermore, if schools attempt to avoid conflict subjects, as many of them profess to do, what influence can they have in offsetting conflict socialization in the communities. 

Another aspect of pilot interviewing which caused some distress

## Ch.III - p.15

was that some children told stories that perhaps had a factual basis regarding the possession of arms and the activities of older members of their families. One seven-year-old boy was quite adamant that his big brother had "a lot of guns and ammunition in his room". Working in an area where the army suspected a 15-year-old boy of three political murders discouraged many questions I would have liked to have followed up. In fact, a study involving children of the same family in different classes and schools was abandoned through fear of uncovering too much information for my own good.

After leaving schools during the major surveys some preliminary work was carried out on the answers to certain questions. A preliminary scanning revealed that the majority of boys had taken the questions But there were a few jokers. For instance one boy came seriously. from "Tangmagallohooaybumphry" who wanted to be a clergyman and live in a "tree". He liked Northern Ireland because of the good chances one had of becoming a clergyman, but disliked it because there were too few trees. Answers which had to be taken more seriously were those where boys proclaimed their fathers were members of the IRA (perhaps some of them are now members themselves). In This gave rise to fears that question-answer information would be passed on at home. ... Even if the boys had been joking would the fathers see it that way? ... It is no exaggeration that I lived in fear of having the questionnaires stolen when I attempted to move them to Scotland. My fears were unrealised. Perhaps they were completely groundless. But how many people in Northern Ireland live "nervously" because of "possibilities".

Leaving a school in a segregated housing estate, or city area, and entering the home of a family that shared the religion of the school, presented on most occasions a smooth progression through similar emotive symbols. For instance, within a County or Protestant school one may

see a Union Jack, a picture of the Queen, and a copy of the King James Version of the Scriptures. In a Protestant home, or community, such colours and pojects persist with occasional variations such as biblical texts, pictures of "King Billy", and Certificates regarding membership of various Protestant lodges. Again, leaving a Catholic school, and entering a Catholic home, or community, is a relatively even process in symbolism, "Within the school one may find pictures of "Our Lord" of the "Sacred Heart" variety (never found in Protestant schools) or those of "Our Lady" a crucifix as distinguished from the simple cross sometimes found in Protestant schools; religious statues; pictures of the present Pope and probably one of Cardinal Conway, Catholic Primate of all Ireland. Within the Catholic community and Catholic homes such emotive symbolism continues with perhaps greater emphasis upon Irish political symbols and Irish heroes. Briefly, moving from religious schools to the community which the school serves involves a continuity of symbolic socialization. sea i

Just the opposite occurs as one moves from the religious schools into the homes and community of persons of the other religion. If one understands the symbolism the effect can be frightening. One passes, for instance, from a "Catholic atmosphere" within a school to the outright Protestant symbols of say, Sandy Row in Belfast, where the pavements, flags, gable-endings, public-house decorations, and shop windows co-operate to portray the emotive symbolism of a Protestant Ulster. Again, one may interview in a school in the Shankill Road (Belfast) and walk (if one dares) straight into the Falls Road (Catholic) with its Catholic and United Ireland symbolism in white lettering on house-ends, the pictures of Irish heroes in public houses, and Catholic church collection boxes on shop counters, some of which contain, among other things, Irish newspapers which one could not have purchased in the Protestant area only a few hundred yards away. Briefly, moving from the schools of one community into another community involves dramatic discontinuities in symbolic socialization. Bluntly put, the symbols of the other community are hated and feared.

Taking into account: (1) the greater polarization of communities over the years of open hostilities; (2) the greater emphasis upon emotive symbolism during disorders; (3) and the fact that schoolboys try to avoid crossing the territory (if indeed they need consider this) of another religion in their journeys to and from school, and elsewhere, suggests that schoolboys experience few discontinuities in emotive symbols.

The school is penetrated by many of the symbols peculiar to their community, to the exclusion of those of another religion. The symbolic experience between school and community is relatively smooth compared to that between schools of different religion. Many questions can be put to Protestants which would be unrealistically asked in Catholic schools and <u>vice versa</u>. The content of emotive socialization conflicts between religions. Who is responsible for such conflict? Are the chief socializing culprits or heroes of division to be found within the religious school or community?

My total experience of life in Northern Ireland has brought me closer to the feelings of the people there. This does not mean, however, that knowledge of disorder in other countries cannot give insights into Ulster affairs. But what direct experience of life in Ulster (the field) over a prolonged period can do is to allow one to escape the accusation of pontificating after a few days in Belfast or Derry at the worst of times (armchair philosophy or highly skewed experience). But if I have noticed the psychological effects upon me during the period of fieldwork how much more must the people of Ulster feel the strain of conflict. And how much more so must impressionable children be affected. Many of the younger children in the sample (eight years old) have spent half their lives amidst the disorders.

> . .

ء ، ، ۴

· • • • •

### Chapter III - Footnotes

 W.K. Fitzsimmons, reported in Belfast Telegraph, Nov 11 1971, "Too many 'Blinkered Experts' on Ulster".

2. <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Oct 21 1971, "How Far do you go to Extract Information?", Barry White.

- ; , . . .

ς...

<u>س</u> ۲۰۰

**.** .

.

- 3. <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Mar 3 1972, "The nervous troubles that are worrying the doctors at Queens", Chichester.
- 4. Nicholas D. Ross, The Identification From Faces of Religious Affiliations in a Sectarian Social Milieu: An Introductory Survey" B.A. dissertation, Queen's University, Belfast, 1971.

ent e se e e e e e

**\$**%

. . . . . . .

,

. .

gan a gan 🕴 in gan disara

· · · ·

- • •

-

× .

• •

## Chapter IV Basic Attitudes: Affect to Government and Disorder Approval.

The two basic attitudes to be investigated are located at different levels of political life. The first, affect to Government, is concerned with the day to day authority of the state. The second, disorder approval, is concerned with the unwritten constitutional assumptions of Ulster people - Protestant Ulster and United Ireland - and the means by which they should be maintained, or attained. In Northern Ireland political life has been continued for 50 years at the level of Government at the same time as discord and disorder over the nature and boundaries of the State.

~ \* . . . .

(a) Affect Towards Government

<u>Government</u> is the set of institutions making a legal claim to promulgate decisions binding upon all who live within a territory. To most people the term government applies to the group of people who occupy the most important positions within such institutions. To many children, especially the younger ones, Government is a person, or persons, exercising authority over an area wider than that under the control of parents and schoolteachers. Just how extensive this area may be varies from child to child: some have accurate perceptions of the territory their government rules; others have fanciful notions that their government rules the world.

Affect is the emotion one feels towards any person or object. Thus affect towards government is the emotional

Ch.IV - p.2

experience one has when thinking about government. In particular, it is likely to be the feeling one has when anticipating the reactions of government towards oneself. Such affect may be positive or negative: one may love or hate a government; be pleasantly disposed towards it or disinterested; feel that its intentions are benevolent or malevolent.

Before we begin to study affect towards government, we must know whether or not the boys in the sample have a conception of 'government' and, if so, what form this perception takes.

The earliest pilot work in 1970 convinced me that children of eight years of age in Northern Ireland have a grasp of the concept of government. At seven there is some hesitancy. Pretesting for the Primary school survey revealed that by the age of eight 95 per cent of the children could differentiate between the public and private sectors of life. At age seven (primary three) only 45 per cent managed to differentiate between persons who worked for Government and those who didn't. Thus the major Primary survey began with eight year olds.

During the Primary Survey (1972) the boys were confronted with a list of six occupations<sup>1</sup> and asked to choose those who worked for the Government with the following results:

Table IV:1 Ability to assign those who work for Government to the Public Sector of Life: Primary Boys

|           | Protestant<br>\$ | Catholic<br>\$ |
|-----------|------------------|----------------|
| Public    | 96               | 92             |
| Private   | 2                | 3              |
| No answer | 2                | 5 -            |

1

Thus it is with confidence that we can proceed to ask boys how they think and feel about Government. Earlier studies have revealed that younger children think of government in terms of persons.<sup>2</sup> Thus it may be wasteful of time and resources trying to teach a given political concept until a child has reached the appropriate developmental level. On the other hand, if schools wish to have a maximum of influence in political thinking, they should begin helping the child to orient himself towards political concepts as soon as they begin to form. Child perceptions of government have previously been found to begin with a few figures of high governmental authority. As the child develops his attention turns to other, more abstract, aspects of government as he becomes aware of its group and institutional character. The boys in Northern Ireland were offered the choice of either selecting one of the ideas of Government given in the questionnaire or supplying their own. Their perceptions of Government (whether personal or institutional) are reflected in the following table:

÷.,

Table IV:2 ... Perceptions of Government

Let Mark

| e Ayr i i     |          | Protestants             |                          |
|---------------|----------|-------------------------|--------------------------|
|               | Primary  | Secondary<br>first year | Secondary<br>fourth year |
|               | •        | •                       | ۰.                       |
|               | 66       | 55                      | 46                       |
| Institutional | 32 · · · | <b>41</b>               | <b>47</b>                |
| Other         | -        | . 2                     | 3                        |
| No answer     | . 2      |                         | n e <b>4</b>             |
|               |          | Catholics               | ж. 2 <sup>7</sup><br>Х   |
| Personal      | 64       | 50                      | 41                       |
| Institutional | 31       | 44                      | 49                       |
| Other         | 2        | 3                       | 6                        |
| No answer     | 3<br>3   | 3                       | 4                        |

Findings in Ulster bear out what is common in other research in child political socialization: children begin with personalised conceptions of government and later revise these in favour of more institutionalised outlooks. The older boys in Northern Ireland were much more likely to think of Government in terms of Parliament while the younger boys were more prone to identify Government with the Prime Minister and the Queen.

and the second and the

Having established that almost all the boys in the sample have a grasp of the concept-government-and that this concept changes in well defined ways over time, it is possible to now consider the first basic variable in this investigation - affect towards government.

Host early studies of childrens' affect towards government revealed that children think of government as benevolent. Greenstein summarized his findings regarding American childrens' feelings about political authority as follows:

> The New Haven findings may be summarized as follows: (1) children are at least as likely as adults to perceive high political roles as being important; (2) they seem to be more sympathetic to individual political leaders (and, in general, to politics) than are adults; (3) in at least some cases their actual images of political leaders are qualitatively different from the images one would expect adults to hold, especially in the emphasis on benignness; and (4) most important, the widespread adult political cynicism and distrust do not seem to have developed by eighth grade (age 13).

Easton and Dennis, whose work is based upon a sample of 12,000 white American children from not too severely depressed urban areas, comment:

When the child emerges from his state of political innocence, therefore, he finds himself a part of a going political concern which he ordinarily adopts immediately as a source of nurture and protection. His early experience of government is analogous to his early experience of the family in that it involves an initial context of highly acceptable dependancy. Against this strongly positive affective background the child devises and later revises his cognitive image of government.

In some of the earliest American studies of childrens' affect towards government the youngest children idealise government and are attached to it in highly positive emotional ways. Such studies note, that, with age, there is a tendency for this highly positive image to drop-off. For instance, Greenstein, referring to childrens' views of the President, comments that the older children in his sample showed a "rather complicated pattern of de-idealization with age, depending upon the facet of the

Ch.IV - p.6

Presidential image referred to by the child."; and Easton and Dennis suggest that the reasons why a child's affect towards a government becomes less positive with age are because he sees government more in terms of institutions than persons, and cannot invest the same emotional feelings upon his revised conception of government, and also that his ways of expressing sentiments may be undergoing a transformation.

a ha a na tanàn ang taona da ang

But some American children are not so positive towards government." In a study of the children in the Appalachian week region of the United States their attitudes towards government were less favourably inclined than among white children elsewhere.<sup>5</sup> Here also the childrens' views were more static and did not develop<sup>\*</sup> considerably with age. <sup>30</sup> Edward S. Greenberg found that most of the American children in his sample rated government highly on paternalism-benevolence early in life, but that this way declined across the grades especially among blacks with the most accurate perceptions of race relations. "Those black children who we did not see race relations clearly had a higher rating of government performance than others. This last finding has relevance for Northern Treland since whether one conceives of it as one nation or two will probably have consequences for one's view of government. A recent American study of the long-range effects of the Vietnam War reveals diminuation of respect for the Presidency among school-age children, at Out of 2,677 children in grades three through eight less than 25 per cent said they would support a set President during war-time if they felt his policies were wrong. Research in Britain concerning affect for government has, suntil recently, led one to believe that positive emotional feeling was

at least as high as elsewhere.<sup>8</sup> But Dennis <u>et al</u> found that of the children in a cross-national sample in England, West Germany, Italy and the United States, the English children were lowest in positive affect for government.<sup>9</sup> Thus there is some evidence that children's views of government are not so benevolent as first supposed. Alternatively governments may have become more malevolent since the early studies were carried out. In a country where large sections of the adult population have been opposed to government (rent-strikes, participation in banned parades, disorders) we might expect children to have malevolent views of political authorities.

All the boys in this investigation lived under the Stormont government. Interviewing came to an end the day before the suspension of Stormont was <u>announced</u>. The Northern Ireland Government received more administrative and legislative independence than any other part of the United Kingdom. The Government of Ireland Act, 1920, states that the supreme authority of Westminster is unaffected by the creation of Stormont. Until Westminster suspended the Northern Ireland Government in 1972, British Cabinet Ministers had no executive power in any of the powers transferred to Stormont.

In Northern Ireland how a person feels about government can generally be gauged by applying the rule: if the Protestants like it the Catholics won't and <u>vice versa</u>. Although there are some exceptions to this rule it can be applied widely because the community is split at so many levels. Thus no government can be popular for long because it is difficult to do anything

for everyone at the same time. Or, in other words, fair distribution of collective goods does not necessarily improve the capability of the government to govern. Unionist governments were criticized by Unionists for appeasing Catholics in reforms, disbanding the 'B' Specials, and not being tough enough in law enforcement. And Unionist governments have also been attacked by Catholics basically because they are seen to rule a territory artificially designed to keep them in power perpetually, and because they must inevitably rule in the interests of Protestants. A government which is thought to be distributing collective goods fairly may be attacked by Protestants because this may mean that Catholics will stay in Ulster and finally vote Ulster into a United Ireland. It is also attacked by Catholics for not introducing social and political reforms quickly enough. To Protestants a government may go "too far and too fast" in reforms whilst to Catholics what it offers is always "too little and too late". What is of particular interest in this context is how adult evaluations of government were transmitted to schoolboys during a particularly turbulent time in the history of Northern Ireland. A time when the security forces of Ulster could not enforce the law and political leaders were in exceedingly precarious positions. One may say that this was not an ideal time to investigate affect towards government. Alternatively, it is of immense interest to know how the youthful population was reacting to political authority at a time when the momentum

Most of the studies of childrens' affect for government have been based upon scales of infallibility, leadership qualities,

, . · · • · · ·

e

of events was leading to its collapse, or suspension.

Ch.IV - p.9

power, and benevolence. Of all the items used to tap 'affect' benevolence is the most affect laden and has mainly been operationalized in terms of "would want to help me if I needed it".

This measure of affect has been adjusted in two ways in this study. First, the emphasis on the individual child has been diluted. The item, 'wants to help people like me' has been substituted to allow the boy reflect community feelings more directly. Second, most affect scales using the 'help me' item have ranged from 'would always want to help', to 'would never want to help', or 'would not usually want to help'. Pilot testing in Northern Ireland soon revealed that this negative statement towards government was not sufficient to encompass all attitudes. Thus the more extreme case of 'wants to hurt people like me' was introduced. The question takes the following form:

## Here are some things people sometimes say about the Government of Northern Ireland. TICK the ONE that comes closest to telling about the Government of Northern Ireland

| 1              | 2               | 3 | 4                  |
|----------------|-----------------|---|--------------------|
| The Government | The Government  | 1 | The Government     |
| always wants   | sometimes wants |   | wants to           |
| to help        | to help         |   | <u>hurt</u> people |
| people like me | people like me  |   | people like me     |

Options 1 and 2 represent <u>positive affect</u> to government. Item 1 will be regarded as the 'benevolent' view of government and will be represented by <u>POSITIVE</u> in capitals, in the tables that follow. Item 2 will be represented by "positive" on small letters. Items 3 and 4 will be regarded as negative affect to government. Item 4 reveals 'malevolent' feelings about government and will be represented by <u>NEGATIVE</u> in capitals, in the tables. Item 3 will be represented by "negative".

The major reason for not collapsing 1 and 2, and 3 and 4, into positive and negative categories respectively, is because Protestant boys generally separate over options 1 and 2 and only a minority of them are negative to government.

# Table IV:3 Affect towards Government

|                  | Protestants                   | Catholics                     |
|------------------|-------------------------------|-------------------------------|
| Grammar Schools  | (N=477)                       | (N=503)                       |
| 1. POSITIVE      | 37                            | 16                            |
| 2. positive      | 55                            | 49                            |
| 3. negative      | 6 30                          | 25.125                        |
| 4. NEGATIVE      | 2                             | B $_{0}/C$<br>2 D.I. = 27,10  |
| No answer        | 0                             | 2 D.I. = $273^{10}$           |
| د م<br>د ب       | Gld D.I. = 130                | D.I. = 6%                     |
| Intermediate Sch | ools (N-478)                  | (N <b>-474</b> )              |
| 1. POSITIVE      | 30                            | 18                            |
| 2. positive      | 49                            | 45                            |
| 3. negative      | 15                            | 23                            |
| 4. NEGATIVE      | 5                             | 11                            |
| No answer        | 1                             | 3 D.I. = 16%                  |
| : -              | 1/1° D.I. = 314               | D.I. = 178                    |
| Primary Schools  | (N=561)                       | (N=548)                       |
| 1. POSITIVE      | <b>64</b>                     | 33                            |
| 2. positive      | <b>30</b>                     | 34                            |
| 3. negative      | 2                             | 17                            |
| 4. NEGATIVE      | - S <b>1</b> - S - S - S - S  | 12                            |
| No answer        | 3                             | 4 D.I. = 31%                  |
| · · · ·          | Grammar/Primary<br>D.I. = 30% | Grammar/Primary<br>D.I. = 23% |

.

# •

4

Ch.IV - p.12

Only approximately two per cent of the boys gave no answer to this question. This indicates that opinions were well formed on the issue presented to them and that little hesitancy existed about expressing such feelings. This is typical of Ulster adulas, adolescents and children. Few boys asked any questions during the administration of this question. One reason for this may be that it was preceded by four questions, in the same form, regarding affect for policemen, soldiers, prime minister and Queen.

, ender a second

"Since there are few guidelines regarding childrens' affect for government in Northern Ireland one could take adult regime outlooks as one indicator of how children will respond to political questions. The adult Loyalty survey (1968) found that, 'among Protestants, supporters of the Constitution outnumber overt opponents by a majority of seven to one. Catholics, by contrast, are divided into three almost equal groups-supporters, don't knows, and opponents. Only one third are prepared to explicitly endorse the Constitution. Although support for the Constitution and affect for government are not analagous in all countries there is a case in Northern Ireland for expecting attitudes to the Constitution to be a rough indicator of how a person feels about government. On the other hand there are some upholders of the Constitution whose attitudes to government are far from strongly positive. But using the adult finding as a general guide line one might hypothesize that Protestants will be more likely than Catholics to see government in favourable terms.

Ch.IV - p.13

As expected Protestants are more positive in their attitudes to government than Catholics (D.I. = 25%). Protestant children are more prone to take up the extremely positive position. Catholics are more negative in outlook, yet a majority did have favourable attitudes to government. There are more divisions within Catholic opinion in this issue than among Protestants. Yet it is noteworthy that in Feb-March, 1971, 64 per cent of Catholic schoolboys recorded positive affect towards the Stormont government, and that in the few months before the announcement of the suspension of the government, 67 per cent of Catholic Primary boys were positively oriented towards it, with 33 per cent recording the most ideal affect. This leads one to suspect that Protestant and Catholic boys may have very different reasons for recording positive affect. This will be investigated in a later chapter.

It might have been hypothesized that differences between Catholics and Protestants regarding government would have been greatest in the Intermediate schools which contain higher proportions of the working class than either Primary, or Grasmar, schools. But boys of different religions in the Intermediaty schools are closer together in their feelings about government than is observable elsewhere. This is caused mainly by 20 per cent of Protestant Intermediate boys being negatively oriented to government. This reflects the tendency, sometimes observable, of the adult Protestant working class to see the official Unionist Party as a middle, and upper, class institution. Although there is some working class solidarity between religions at the level of government manual workers divide more clearly by religion in their views of the nature and boundaries of Northern Ireland.

The socialization of affect towards government in Northern Ireland varies by religion and school-type. There is much more 'negative' affect than is found in other studies. It will be the purpose of the chapters which follow to investigate the agents and conditions associated with different levels of affect.

#### (b) Political Disorder

مدي م ما

Political <u>discord</u> occurs when political disputes cannot be settled within a set of commonly acknowledged rules, such as the Constitution. Thus, <u>discord</u> may involve disputes about the nature and boundaries of the State as has been the case in Northern Ireland. Political <u>disorder</u> occurs when such <u>discord</u> is expressed physically in a manner that could involve bloodshed and death. There are, of course, other forms of <u>disorder</u> such as rent-strikes and taking part in banned processions, but violent illegal activity is here taken as the fairest expression of <u>disorder</u>. In what follows <u>disorder</u> will always refer to <u>political disorder</u> except where it is clearly stated that this is not the case.

The Irish have had a violent political history. When Irishmen have not been serving in foreign regiments they have often been engaged in violence at home. The State of

Ch.IV - p.15

Northern Ireland was established violently. Force, and the threat of force, was sufficient to ensure that the Protestant population in Northern Ireland would have political institutions to match their own particular way of life. The Catholics in Northern Ireland, retained their memories of the Plantations of the seventeenth Century by English and Scots Loyalists and continued to demand distinctive territory and political institutions to fit their own community desires. Two mutually exclusive goals existed within one State. How these goals were expressed violently in the 1920s is told and retold, often at great length, to the present younger generation. Those who were young men during the I.R.A. campaign of the 1950s are fathers now who rear their sons in the memory of violent activities. School history cannot ignore political violence in any genuine attempt to teach the history of Northern Ireland. History is enacted year by year as men solemnly parade through the towns of Ulster to remember 1690 and violence takes a prominent place in Irish poems and songs. But the children and young people of Northern Ireland no longer need historical reminders of political violence; nor do they need the violent emotive symbolism expressed in the re-acting of past conflict; the past is now fused with the present; the violent historical tradition is now part and parcel of the everyday lives of many Ulster youngsters.

The 3,000 children upon which this study is based live in areas which have, since 1969, experienced different levels of disorders Some of the boys are drawn from districts which have seen widespread disorder; others live in the more peaceful areas peripheral to the most violent spots; others in Provincial towns and rural areas:

Even the riot-torn areas are relatively peaceful for long periods of time. One can, for instance, walk through the centre of a riot area without seeing any trace of trouble apart from the devastation to shops and houses caused during disorders. One can walk up and down among the maze of tiny terraced streets near the peace-line in Belfast without being aware that anyone is paying very much attention to the presence of a stranger. Women go on shopping, children playing, and men working, lounging at street corners, or drinking, as though nothing unusual had taken place. They have learned to live with the disorder. But the underlying unease is never far from consciousness; trouble may break out at any moment and one may be at the centre of disorder. This sort of situation creates a nervous strain one learns to live with. Being anxious and fearful are normal reactions, and perhaps getting used to living with danger whilst still a child is a splendid preparation for a life time in a country where disputes are settled with guns rather than around a conference table. n a Cr

In the Provincial towns the general atmosphere is more relaxed. It is easier to talk to people, especially further to the West. Explosions are rare, but the sombre threat of violence always hangs in the background as a warning against taking the peace too much for granted. No matter where one goes in Northern Ireland, everyone has heard of the disorder,

S 44 B

discussed it, in many cases suffered from it, either directly or indirectly, and in almost every case taken a decided stance regarding it. The political violence affects everyone - adults and children.

At the end of a three-day visit to Northern Ireland, Mr. Harold Wilson said "One of the most serious aspects is the effect on children - those who have been pressed or duped by one side or the other to take part in street fights or riots. One hates to think what this will mean for their future development or attitude.<sup>12</sup> The Minister of Education in Northern Ireland said be believed that the most evil and irreparable violence which was taking place was registering in the minds of children. He asked:

> Is there anything more evil than the poisoning of a young mind, the deprivation of a young spirit? Childhood is a very short time, it is a time of exploration, discovery and wonder; it should be free of cares and fear or hatred, but for many children in Northern Ireland today much of the joy of youth has been blotted out. To them the adult world must appear to be a place of barricades and bombs, anger and noise, foul language and a terrible hatred between men.<sub>13</sub>

A secondary headmaster in a 'hard' area in Belfast, commenting upon some of the effects of the disorder, reported that: "In the age range 11 to 14 there has been a greater number of instances of unwarranted lack of civility or even aggression towards other pupils or a teacher."<sup>14</sup> According to a child psychologist the disorder has resulted in two types of reactions among children: "(1) emotional weeping, wildly aggressive behaviour accompanied by uncontrolled laughing and frequent nightmares; (2) chronic anxiety with traumatic reaction to battle like noises and situations."<sup>15</sup>

On the other hand Belfast reacted to the riots of 1969-70 with a drop of almost 50 per cent in the suicide rate and a decrease in depressive illness. One consultant psychiatrist points out that people in Belfast had more chance to unleash aggressive feelings instead of "bottling them up". He also found that most of the anxiety was a normal reaction in the circumstances. The most interesting feature of this report was that the decrease in depressive illness was more significant in riot areas and least in the relatively peaceful peripheral districts.<sup>16</sup> Two psychiatrists,<sup>17</sup> at least, have pointed out that the more extreme behavioural pattern in children have occurred mainly among those with a history of psychiatric illness. For instance, many of the sounds in the disorder have acted as a trigger which sets off the process by which an epileptic suffers from a fit and/or blackout. However, most of the children, on the surface at least, appear fairly happy with the violent situation; many seem to enjoy the chance of playing violent games 'for real'. There is little evidence that seeing a riot or even taking part in one makes a boy less likely to want to do so again. In fact, such evidence as does exist points in the opposite direction: boys who have seen the hard consequences of disorder are ready to take part when it breaks out again.<sup>18</sup>

Children in Northern Ireland, despite the effects it may have upon their personality, are "socialized into conflict"<sup>19</sup>

- 27 5

from a very early age. A Belfast boy of 12 years of age wrote:

Even the children who have never experienced disorder themselves have seen it on television or read about it in the newspapers which often carry a heavy quota of pictures taken during and after violent events. The supervisor of childrens' television (BBC) emphasises that great care is taken to avoid showing children actions which they might imitate--like using knives or ropes. "I think that the main danger of too much violence on television is not that it may lead to aggressive behaviour in certain individuals, although it can do this, but that it may become accepted as something ordinary and unremarkable."21 In Northern Ireland the vast majority of boys interviewed said that they usually watched disorder in Ulster on television. Parenty in relatively trouble free areas realise that their children are not living through the violence completely unscathed. Some parents have great difficulty in explaining the disorder to their children. Parental reactions to this problem vary from sheltering the children from violence to being completely honest about how they see it. One child psychiatrist advised that "Children see things in black and white and that is how physicits should explain it. It may seem naive to adults but it is the way children see things."22 If many of the parents follow this advice the "black and white" of the explanations may become orange and green. If the schools endeavour to present a different picture their efforts will probably be superseded by earlier and more informal learning experiences.

Ch.IV - p.20

The games small children play have been affected by the political disorders. Child welfare workers have watched children of four and five building tiny barricades and throwing toy wooden bricks like petrol bombs. Nursery play-cubes, the size of tea-chests, have been used like armoured cars, each child sitting in a cube with his head protruding through a hole in the top and firing imaginary machine-guns.23 But when the games become too 'life-like' the children are in danger from the security forces which have mistaken plastic models of the Thompson sub-machine gun for the genuine article. As one soldier put it, "A child getting one of those for Christmas could get a stockingful of trouble."24 Plato thought the games children played so important in the formation of civic character to have them constantly supervised by State nurses who were to "have an eye to the decorum or indecorum of their behaviour."<sup>25</sup> In Northern Ireland the games boys play are to a certain extent divisive. Cricket being an English game, is played by few Catholics, whilst Gaelic football and hurley, being Irish games, are played by few Protestants. Even when boys play the same games the Catholic and Protestant teams always play against one another. And some of the 'games' are violently divisive when stoning Catholics, Protestants or British soldiers, becomes the clear goal in view.

Children in Northern Ireland need not find their fighting heroes on the cinema screen. Their hero galleries can be full of man whom they have personally known. One of the most recent heroes--Joe McCann, the Che Guevara of the I.R.A.-was active in the Republican movement from the early 1960's. In the Lower Falls, stories are still told of his deeds during the Battle of the Falls in July 1970. It was the first stand-up fight against the troops in Ireland dince 1916. Slowly the security net closed around McCann until in 1972, he was killed in Belfast. Like many other local man killed during the disorders he will hang in the child portrait gallery and provide some of the ideals they may try to emulate. Children first begin to imitate their heroes and later are able to identify with them when they get the 'feel' of the values for which they stood. The boy internalises what he believes to have been the values of his hero. So many Irish heroes have been men of violence. So many Scots-Ulster heroes have been men who shouted, 'No Surrender'.

Although religious and political leaders of various shades of opinion have justified the political violence in Northern Ireland there are other influentials who have condemmed it.

The Prime Minister of Northern Ireland, Mr. Brian Faulkner:

I can only describe this kind of work as the actions of sub-human animals. I cannot conceive of any person with a Christian outlook involving himself in this kind of activity. 26

The ex-Prime Minister of the Republic of Ireland, Mr. Jack Lynch:

No Irishman with the least claim to ideals or principles, no Irishman with the least shred of Christianity or sanity can justify or condone the maiming or killing of innocent people - and I am including in this all those who have died by violence or have been injured or disfigured for life in recent incidents.<sub>26</sub> The Catholic Bishop of Down and Connor, Nost Rev. Dr. Philbin:

4 . 4 . .

• • •

A AL ALLA A

... The outrages make it clear that we are experiencing a conspiracy or a number of conspiracies against the whole of our society. To any of those responsible who have not entirely subordinated the teaching of Christ to evil councils, I say again what I have said repeatedly: give up those organisations and sum are instigating deeds · 2 which fly in the face of all that Christ has taught us. Only evil can come of evil deeds. 26

The Protestant Bishop of Down and Dromore, The Rt.Rev.George A. Quin:

How long must innocent people suffer and the lives of so many be jeeperdised by these sub-human activists? with any semblance of decency and humanity to unite to condemn these further outrages affecting the lives of innocent men, women and children.26

ы. "Т.« There is no lack of condemnation of the disorder from men in responsible political and religious positions in Ireland. But the violence continues and also has its justifiers in political and religious life. Father Desmond Wilson of Belfast writes:

> When the Ulster Covenant was being signed in 1912 to demonstrate the willingness of the people here to oppose Home Rule even, if necessary, by force of arms, the Protestant Churches gave the project their blessing and Protestant clergymen were among the first to sign.

To say that the use of force is against the principles or practice of Christians would be hypocritical. They have used force and continue to use force. Whether they call this legitimate force or violence there comes a time when Christians admit that only force can solve their problems. Whether they are right in this or wrong is a very important matter, but as a matter of fact, this is what they believe. 27

After the imposition of direct rule from Westminster Mr. Brian Faulkner conceded that "to rebel against the Mother Parliament would be a contradiction in terms for Unionists, and would be totally unjustified unless the Government in London were clearly trying to sell Ulster down the river and put it out of the United Kingdom".<sup>28</sup>

 $Ch_{IV} - p_{.23}$ 

On the other hand, the I.R.A. campaign of violence has been justified on the grounds that all other attempts to achieve justice in Ireland have failed and resort to arms is the only way to avoid constant political repression.<sup>29</sup> People in Northern Ireland seek peace with justice; but finding justice involves disorder since what one side is seen as gaining is almost inevitably seen by the other as a loss. Children and young people also operate the twin desires of adults. They want peace--yet many who say that this is their chief desire-also approve the culturally accepted virtue of fighting for political goals. In this way the political system in Northern Ireland could be said to be 'persisting': cultural norms, attitudes and behaviours are being effectively handed on to the rising generation. If the system is to 'change' to one where violence is eschewed as a means of realizing political ends, some new, powerful, factor will have to come into operation. The results of violence have not in the past caused Ulster people to turn from disorder. Part of the burder of this study is to investigate under what conditions violence is most likely to occur. Perhaps by doing this we shall also see what conditions are most conducive to peaceful politics.

Children, especially in the most troubled areas, have been drawn directly into the violence in two ways. They have felt the effects of the disorder in their daily lives and they have actively taken part in the violence. They began to feel the effects of the disorders in August, 1969, when many fled with their parents from their homes to Army camps in Eire or to

quieter areas of Northern Ireland. Since then the population movement within Belfast has been continued, with Protestant and Catholics moving into 'safer' regions of the City, often flying from homes surrounded by those of the opposite religion. One result of such population disturbance has been that the "mixed areas" which were formerly thought of as "buffer zones guaranteeing stability have become segregated areas.<sup>30</sup> The children have also had to evacuate many of their schools frequently due to bomb scares and have sometimes been unable to return to school after lunch because of terrorist v army gunfire. At times their parents have removed the younger children from school due to rumours of impending trouble.

Both the British army and the I.R.A. have been accused of using children as a cover for their activities. Bomb planters it was alleged used children as a shield from Army gunfire,<sup>31</sup> and the Army in Londonderry was accused of using children going to school as a cover for troops repairing the perimeter fencing at an Army post.<sup>32</sup>

and the state

.

Boys, below the age of 15, have been arrested by the Army in Ulster. 'They were suspected of offences relating to riotous behaviour, disorderly behaviour, breach of the peace or malicious damage.'<sup>33</sup> It has been alleged that the Army have taken children between the ages of nine and fifteen from their beds on dawn raids and driven them away in armoured cars for interogation without the presence of parents. It has also been alleged that many of them were kept without food for 12 hours.<sup>34</sup> Mr. Jack Lynch described the practice of arresting and interrogating children as 'heartsickening' and 'intolerable'.<sup>35</sup>

Children have witnessed killings: a 13 year-old boy told the Widgery Tribunal that he saw two men shot dead on 'Bloody Sunday';<sup>36</sup> they have been injured: a six-year-old Belfast boy received a leg injury after a bomb he picked up unwittingly went off;<sup>37</sup> they have suffered the extreme penalty of death: five hours after a Protestant boy was shot dead near the Belfast peaceline in May, 1972, two Catholic boys were shot from a passing car as they played near their home in the Springfield area of the City;<sup>38</sup> they are very familiar with the results of violent death: approximately 500 children attended the funeral of a friend in Darry in September, 1971, after a 14-year-old schoolgirl had been shot dead during rioting in the City.<sup>39</sup>

The majority of the boys in this sample have not been directly subjected to violence. But a sizeable minority have and the others have seen and heard of their experiences and have sought to identify with them on many occasions. One example of this may be that many schoolchildren went on "strike" from school during one or more of the days following "Bloody Sunday" in Londonderry. Children in relatively peaceful towns in Northern Ireland thus identified with those in the more troubled areas. What is crucial regarding subjection to violence and identification with it is the conditions of learning that a violent atmosphere creates.
Ch. IV-p. 26

Hany of the peaceful ideals of the community may be withdrawn from current circulation for a prolonged period and bitterness and recrimination may become the prime motivations. Children learning about politics under such conditions are, to some extent, bereft of the support they might otherwise have received in the pursuit of peaceful activities. Thus peaceful reinforcement is partly withdrawn from them and violent reinforcement takes its place. Under such severe learning conditions some peaceful attitudes may well be extinguished altogether. Comparisons between life in some parts of Ulster and occupied Europe during World War II are not unrealistic. This is not to say who are Germans and who are natives, but merely that the physical presence of troops and firing on the ground is such as to resemble the Continent between 1940-44.

\* 2

But Ulster children have not only been exposed to disorder: they have also contributed to it. A nine-year-old boy told a reporter 'You tie your cheese-wire between the two lamp posts about six feet up. There's always a soldier standing on the back of a land-rover. Even with their search lights he can't see the wire in the dark. It's just at the right height to catch his throat. Then we throw stones.'<sup>40</sup> Four boys playing truant aged nine to twelve volunteered the information, 'We don't like places like school. We're scarin' the Army instead. We're makin' monkeys out of them. Boom, boom, boom! Shooting at a stage-coach. Wells Fargo. Bang! Bang!'<sup>41</sup> This illustrates the mixed television and real-life violence in childrens' minds. One nine-year-old Protestant boy wrote that if Bernadette Devlin came up his road 'we would go over to her and shoot her dead and kill her baby.' A tenyear-old Catholic boy wrote that if the Rev. Ian Paisley came to his town he would,'...stoned him and he got into the car and drive away and I got tacks and I bursted all the tyres and burned the car...'<sup>42</sup>. Children who may not have taken part in disorder anticipate doing so if the occasion arises.

Stoning the British Army is probably the mildest form of violence in which schoolboys participate. This is not limited to Catholic areas only. I have spent hours on the Shankill Road watching schoolboys stoning soldiers. It has been alleged that children stone those of the other religion from their school bus while passing through certain parts of Belfast. 43 A deadlier way of delivering a stone is to hit it with a hurley stick so that it flies hard and low and gets under a soldier's guard. Many Catholic children in Northern Ireland are very adopt at handling a hurley stick. Children have also hurtled bottles filled with paint at patrolling Saracen armoured cars so that they can be more easily identified in the darkened streets of West Belfast. This activity, it has been alleged, has been the work of some six-year-old boys. Further up the arms escalation ladder is throwing bombs of various types. The Army has alleged that eight-year-old children threw nail bombs at them when they were patrolling the Markets area of Belfast. This was denied by the childrens' mothers. 45 A corporal who rides in a jeep as marksman is reported as saying, "If we could shoot a few of these rioters

Ch.IV - p.28

the trouble would be over in no time. But how can you shoot a kid of 12 or 13, even if he is about to toss a gelignite bomb at you.<sup>46</sup> Another Army spokesman was reported as saying that a boy about eight threw acid at troops during trouble in Belfast. 'We watched him creep from literally behind his mother's skirts and toss the bottle at us. He then dashed back to the protection of his mother. How do you deal with that sort of thing?'<sup>47</sup>

Children, too, it has been alleged, are engaged in violence directed at property. An eye witness claims that a boy aged about 12 planted a bomb which wrecked a shop in Belfast. The witness said he saw him run from a waiting car and leave a parcel outside the shop, then run back to the car which was driven away by an adult.<sup>48</sup>

Boys of 13 and 14 years have been sent for trial on arms charges. A 13-year-old boy was accused of possessing a .455 revolver, two rounds of .45 ammunition and nine rounds of .303 ammunition.<sup>49</sup> A boy a year older, appeared in a Belfast court with adults charged with possessing two gund.<sup>50</sup> Children, it is claimed, act as gun carriers to the person who will do the actual shooting and they are used to lure soldiers into areas where they will be easy targets.<sup>51</sup> Two 16-year-old boys were accused of murdering a witness the night before he was to give evidence. The jury returned an open verdict.<sup>52</sup>

Youthful violence in Northern Ireland has been

organised at gang lovel. Fifteen policeman and 13 civilians were injured as the Tartan Gangs of Belfast tried to take control of an area of the City one weekend. Tartan Gang members launched attacks on shops, public-houses and other premises.<sup>53</sup> This raised the whole question of the collective violence of youth and the link between generalised hooliganism and political violence. Whatever one may think of the Tartan Gangs in Belfast, in the Ulster context, they have been recruited into para-military organisations and have as much political point as many youths in the last days of the Weimar Republic.

The foregoing paragraphs have tried to present only a selection of cases in which boys have been involved in the disorders in Ulster. Many other incidents have been reported, countless others have not reached print, or have gone undetected. After having been subjected to certain conditions for a prolonged period boys begin to take on the coloration of their environment. Bettleheim's study of prisoners of war illustrates that when they gave up all hope of escape they learned to copy the behaviour of the Gestapo guards and treat new prisoners with the same severity they had experienced. 54 Do Protestant children imitate their beliefs about the severity of the IRA? - Do Catholic children imitate what they picture about the cruelty of British soldiers? For instance, a child in Northern Ireland sold to me a news-sheet (in certain circumstances it is unwise to refuse to purchase) with a picture of a huge British soldier beating the life out of a very small, innocent looking girl. Above the drawing was the caption - SAVAGERY.<sup>55</sup> In another part of Ulster a child asked me to purchase a news-letter containing a

strip cartoon depicting the savagery the Protestant Loyalists would mate out to the IRA.<sup>56</sup> Do such schoolboys (only the younger ones sell news-sheets) internalize the violence of what they see as real life situations. Alternatively many comic 'heroes' have come to life in Ulster and 'Desperate Dan' no longer only swaggers down a Cowboy strip.

There is little doubt that children in Northern Ireland learn about political disorder at an early age; suffer from the effects of it; and, to some extent, engage in it. But to stop there would be to misrepresent the youth of Ulster. There is a sizeable minority who reject violence even to obtain the most basic of political values; who would not join a riot or even go near one if such disorder broke out; and the large majority of boys are opposed to social vandalism. And many of such boys live in some of the worst hit areas of Belfast. Dr. Simms, Primate of the Church of Ireland, said the youth of the Church deserved special mention for the vigorous and imaginative way in which they had made efforts to combat frustration to foster new interests in life, and to bring practical remedies in desperate situations. Not only was their rejection of violence 'a mighty influence for good', but their concern for education helped the situation in a positive way. 57

Children in the worst hit areas have skipped beside the wrecked buildings; used the barricades as tennis nets and often enjoyed the excitement of disorderly days. Speaking of the violence one psychiatrist comments: 'Anxiety and fear are normal reactions to stress'. 'It really would be abnormal if

people were not anxious and frightened in areas like the Ardoyne and Ballymurphy. But that is a long way from montal illness'.<sup>58</sup>

The Belfast Tolegraph carried out a study of persons who had lived through the troubles of the 1920's. One such person felt that the current unrest was not quite comparable with the stirring days of the "20s and doubted greatly whether they would have a permanent warping effect upon children. He said; 'I cannot imagine that I have carried a deleterious residue into maturity. I have no recollection of any nervous disorder affecting me, and most of the other people of my generation seem to have proved as hardy--or insensitive, if you wish."<sup>59</sup>

One Belfast headmaster affirms that the '...violence and the riots have made many boys confirmed pacifists.'<sup>60</sup> Most studies of violence among schoolchildren in Northern Ireland have been impressionistic, or based on small samples or on evidence taken from a skew sample e.g. those who have sought help from a psychiatrist. Some headmasters have asked boys to write prayers for Northern Ireland and find the majority praying for peace. Others have requested pupils to outline their major desires for Ulster and have found the ending of the disorders to be a majority choice. Some of these small, localised surveys have suffered from the deficiency that the boys could not be certain of anonymity. Schoolteachers know the 'best'

Ch.IV - p.31

writers in the class. Asking boys to write prayers for Ulster sets them in a religious atmosphere which will be reflected in their answers. When children express their 'wishes' for Northern Ireland it is of interest to discover how they would like to go about achieving such desires. This investigation, too, found the majority of boys in favour of peace, but many of them went on to say that this should be achieved by bringing back the 'B' Specials, or by sending the Protestants back to where they came from. Peace was not unconditional and the means for achieving it were often violent.

In this investigation it was thought realistic to confront the boys with socially approved goals asking how they should be attained. An abstract question - "Do you think that people have a right to fight for basic political values" would have been confusing. But using language which frequently crops up in Ulster makes questions more understandable and answers more likely. Also, it was thought unrealistic to put the same questions about disorder to all the boys since Protestants and Catholics soldom fight for the same political goals. The quastions were:

To Protestants: "Do you think that people have a right to <u>fight</u> in order to keep Ulster Protestant?"

To Catholics: "Do you think that people have a right to <u>fight</u> in order to bring about a United Ireland?"

At each administration of these questions it was clearly pointed out that <u>fighting</u> meant bloodshed, injury, with the possibility of

Ch.IV - p.33

Boys who answered 'yes' to these questions are death. regarded as ondorsing, but not necessarily ready to take part in political disorder for these goals. Boys answering 'no' to these questions are regarded as rejecting disorder for these goals. In the tables that follow those accepting disorder will be represented by "Violent" and it should be clearly understood that this means approval of disorder. The boys rejecting violence for these goals will be represented in the tables as "Peaceful" although one cannot be cortain that they will reject disorder for all goals. They do, however, reject the use of disorder over the most basic of political issues in Northern Ireland. Nevertheless, one is on safer ground when concentration is focussed upon those who accept disorder for these goals in any consideration of the agents and conditions most associated with disorder in Northern Ireland.

### Table IV:4 Attitudes to Discord

|              | Protestants<br>\$            |           |     |              | Catholics |                |  |
|--------------|------------------------------|-----------|-----|--------------|-----------|----------------|--|
| GRAMMAR      |                              |           |     |              |           |                |  |
| Violent      |                              |           | 54  |              |           | 52             |  |
| Peaceful     |                              |           | 43  |              |           | 45             |  |
| No answer    |                              |           | 3   |              |           | 3              |  |
|              | D.I.                         | **        | 249 | D.I.         | ٠         | 124            |  |
| Intermediate | ~                            |           |     |              |           |                |  |
| Violent      |                              |           | 77  |              |           | 64             |  |
| Peaceful     |                              |           | 19  |              |           | 34             |  |
| No answer    |                              |           | 4   |              |           | 2              |  |
|              | D.I.                         | <b>31</b> | 28  | D.I.         | =         | 48             |  |
| PRIMARY      |                              |           | •   |              |           |                |  |
| Violent      |                              |           | 51  |              |           | 60             |  |
| Peaceful     |                              |           | 47  |              |           | 37             |  |
| No answer    |                              |           | 2   |              |           | 3              |  |
|              | Brammar/Primary<br>D.I. = 4% |           |     | Gram<br>D.I. | ar/l      | Primary<br>10% |  |

Only three per cent of the boys failed to answer this serious question about the nature of political discord. This is an indication of certainty and frankness in replying. On no occasion that I can recall, did any boy have to query the meaning of these questions.

Approximately 60 per cent of all the boys endorsed the

;

Ch.IV - p.35

use of violence for political ends. This indicates that socialization into violent political discord is widespread and effective. It is also noteworthy that approximately 37 per cent reject the violent expression of political discord for these goals. This indicates that socialization into disorder is far from totally successful. That only 37 per cent reject violence for these goals suggests that permanent political peace, without changes in the most basic political attitudes and structures, is unlikely.

The differences between Catholics and Protestants on this issue are small reaching only 15 per cent in the Intermediate Schools. Thus political violence is found necessary, or valued widely, in both Protestant and Catholic communities. But there are differences within religions by school type. Although the Protestant Intermediate boys are clearly the most violent in the sample all boys attending Intermediate schools are more likely to endorse the use of political violence than their Primary School or Grammar School co-religionists. This is an indication that boys in different school-types come under the influence of dissimilar agents and conditions of socialization.

It is noticeable that the Protestant and Catholic positions on disorder varies between the two samples. The Secondary survey (early 1971) found the Protestants most ready to approve violence. The Primary survey (early 1972) found the position reversed with the Catholic boys going ahead by a small margin (D.I. = 10%). This probably reflects their response to the post internment atmosphere in the Catholic community. If this is so, then the older Catholic boys will have become more violent in political outlook as will the Secondary Protestant boys under the influence of loyalist para-military organisations.

The findings of these schoolboy surveys vary, especially among Catholics where they vary considerably, from the responses to the Strathclyde Loyalty adult survey (1968) when 52 per cent of Protestant and only 13 per cent of Catholic adults approved violence for political purposes. 61 Insofar as the samples can be compared the Protestants have moved up a little further towards total acceptance of violence to keep Ulster Protestant. But the Catholics have jumped up from a small minority approving violence in 1968 to three-fifths in 1971-72. Probably the events of 1969-70 resocialized many adults, especially Catholics, away from the more peaceful outlooks of the 60s. Perhaps Catholic rejection of violence in 1968 was based upon the assumption that it wouldn't work, and would only cause worse trouble. By 1970-71, one might think that violence would work and/or that it was a necessary tactic in a situation where worse could happen without it. The violent tradition, never far from one's mind, even in peaceful days in Ulster, thus reasserted itself among the adults and was laid afresh in a new generation. If, in fact, violent events tend to increase the propensity to approve political violence among children, adolescents, and adults, then it may be hypothesized that boys living under the most violent learning conditions will be more prone to approve of disorder than those living in the quieter areas of Ulster. This, and other related hypotheses, will be investigated in subsequent chapters.

Ch.IV - p.37

There is no simple rule by which one can predict attitudes to the unwritten constitutions of Ulster from affect to Government and <u>vice versa</u>. Early in 1973 the Orange Order of Ireland broke the 50 year alliance with the official Unionist Party. It urged people to support election candidates who opposed the White Paper which the official Unionist Party had accepted. In so doing the Order demonstrated that Protestant Rule in Ulster was more important than Union with the rest of the United Kingdom. The White Paper was said to contain the 'seeds of destruction of Ulster'.<sup>62</sup> Thus one of Northern Ireland's unwritten constitutions - Protestant Ulster (shorthand for fully democratic government - was accepted in spite of the Government of the day (Westminster) and the ruling party of all Ulster Governments (Unionists).

Neither is it any simpler to predict attitudes to the other constitution - a United Ireland - from affect to Government. The Unionist Governments of Northern Ireland persisted for 50 years despite the widespread Catholic acceptance of a United Ireland concept. Although Catholics said repeatedly that the Unionist Government of Ulster was illegal since it was not representative of the whole people of Ireland, or of the people of the nine County Ulster, they, nevertheless, complied with a sufficient amount of its regulations, extractions and distributions, to allow the Government to rule.

# Table IV: 5 Affect to Covernment by Discord Attitudes

|              | Protestant   |               | Catl    | Catholic      |  |  |
|--------------|--------------|---------------|---------|---------------|--|--|
|              | Violent<br>% | Peaceful<br>t | Violent | Peaceful<br>% |  |  |
| PRIMARY      |              |               |         |               |  |  |
| POSITIVE     | 60           | 71            | 24      | 50            |  |  |
| positive     | 36           | 26            | 35      | 35            |  |  |
| negative     | 3            | 1             | 23      | 9             |  |  |
| negative     | 1            | 1             | 18      | 5             |  |  |
| no answer    | -            | 1             | -       | 1             |  |  |
|              |              |               |         |               |  |  |
| INTERMEDIATE |              |               |         |               |  |  |
| Positive     | 27           | 43            | 13      | 26            |  |  |
| positive     | 51           | 45            | 43      | 50            |  |  |
| negative     | 16           | 9             | 29      | 13            |  |  |
| NEGATIVE     | 5            | 2             | 13      | 7             |  |  |
| no answer    | 1            | 1             | 2       | 4             |  |  |
|              |              |               |         |               |  |  |
| GRAMMAR      |              |               |         |               |  |  |
| POSITIVE     | 32           | 41            | 11      | 24            |  |  |
| positive     | 57           | 54            | 47      | 52            |  |  |
| negative     | - 8          | 3             | 30      | 20            |  |  |
| NEGATIVE     | 2            | l             | 11 "    | 3             |  |  |
| no answer    | 1            | 1             | 1       | 1             |  |  |

By combining attitudes to Government and to discord (see Table IV:5) it becomes clear that boys who reject disorder for these political goals are more positive to government. This is seen most clearly among Catholics. Among Protestants

however, so few are negative to government that one must consider levels of positive affect to note the different positions taken up by boys who accept and reject violence for a Protestant Ulster. . Here the disorderly boys are everywhere less inclined to take the most benevolent view of government (...will always want to help....). This suggests that higher positive affect to government, among both Protestants and Catholics, is associated with more peaceful politics. On the other hand, one must also note, that the majority of boys who accept violent political relations are positive to government. This is most remarkable among Catholic boys where the majority of those accepting violence for a United Ireland are still positive to the government of Northern Ireland. Thus, whilst positive affect to Government is associated with more peaceful politics in the majority of cases, one cannot be certain that disorder acceptance generally leads to negative affect to government.

Probably the best way of viewing affect to government and illegal political activity is that they concern different levels of political life. Attack and counter-attack may proceed at the level of the constitution--the nature and boundaries of the state--whilst day-to-day government is allowed to continue to rule over the disputants. The disputants accept a minimal level of civic life (government) as a necessary condition of life until the wider issue (the Constitution) is resolved.

#### Chapter IV - Footnotes

- 1. The six occupations employed were: policeman, baker, soldier, butcher, judge, grocer. Greatest hesitancy occured over the public v private nature of the judge's role.
- 2. Hess and Torney, op.cit., (fn.3/Introduction).
- 3. Greenstein, op.cit., (fn.3/Introduction.) p.42.
- 4. Easton and Dennis, op.cit., (fn.3/Introduction) p.137.
- 5. Dean Jaros et al, op. cit., (fn.5/Introduction).
- 6. Greenberg, op.cit., (fn.5/Introduction).
- 7. "War and America's Children", <u>San Francisco Examiner</u>, October 10th, 1971.
- 8. Almond and Verba, op.cit., (fn.9/Introduction).
- 9. Jack Dennis et al., (fn.13/Introduction).
- 10. D.I. = difference index. The difference index ranges from 0 when the proportions are identical in the groups being compared to 100 when no one in one group shares an opinion or attitude with someone in another group. The lower the index the greater the similarity between the groups being compared, and the higher the index, the greater the difference.
- 11. Richard Rose, op.cit., (fn.19/Introduction).
- 12. <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Nov., 19th, 1971. "Ulster situation is desperate - Wilson".
- 13. "Most Evil is being done to Young-Long". Belfast Telegraph, 7th Oct., 1971.
- 14. "The Children who live with the Riots" Michael Murphy, Bolfast Telegrap h, April 8th, 1971.
- 15. <u>San Francisco Chronicle</u>, Feb., 4th, 1972. "The Effect of Ulster War on Kids".
- 16. "Mental illness and the troubles", John McPhilemy, Belfast Telegraph, Sept., 30th, 1971.
- 17. Dr. Horris Fraser and Dr. Alex Lyons.
- 18. James L. Russell, "Childrens' Attitudes towards Political Change and Conflict", <u>Community Forum</u>, Vol.2, No.2,1972. (Northern Ireland Community Relations Commission).
- 19. See Richard Rose, <u>Governing without Consensus</u>, <u>op.cit.</u>, Chapter XI.

- 20. "Peter's Poom", Belfast Telegraph, Oct. 15th, 1971.
- 21. "Now", edited by Betty Lowry, <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Sept. 22nd, 1971.
- 22. Roberta Wallace quotes Dr. Morris Fraser, "Mummy why are they fighting?", Belfast Telegraph, Aug.13, 1971.
- 23. "Barricades and Bombs at Playtime", Gibb McGall, <u>Daily</u> <u>Mail</u>, March 23rd, 1971.
- 24. "Toys may get your children shot", <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Dec., 3rd, 1971.
- 25. <u>The Laws</u>, Plato, Book VII, para. 794. (Everyman's Library Edition) 1966.
- 26. <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Sept. 6th, 1971. Four leaders express their condemnation of violence in Northern Ireland. Community Relations Commission Advert.
- 27. "It's untrue to say use of force is un-Christian", letter to editor, Belfast Telegraph, Jan. 7th, 1972.
- 28. "When we would have the moral right to rebel Faulkner", Belfast Telegraph, June 5th, 1972.
- 29. "The I.R.A. Justified", An Phoblacht Iml. 3 Uimh. 6 Meitheamh 1972.
- 30. Flight A report on population movement in Belfast during August 1971, Community Relations Commission Research Unit, CROP (5).
- 31. "Bombers Use Kids as Cover", Belfast Telegraph, May,24th,1972.
- 32. "Army using children as a Cover Teacher", Belfast Telegraph, Sept. 14th, 1971.
- 33. "29 young people arrested by army", <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Dec. 19th, 1971.
- 34. "Doctor deplores arrest of Children", letter, <u>Irish News</u>, Dec. 17th, 1971.
- 35. "Arrests of children sickening Lynch", <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Dec. 10th, 1971.
- 36. "I saw two men shot dead Newry boy tells the Widgery Tribunal", Belfast Telegraph, March, 14th, 1971.
- 37. "Boy (6) injured by Pipe bomb", Belfast Telegraph, June, 2nd, 1972.
- 38. Belfast Telegraph Reporters, Belfast Telegraph, May, 19th, 1972.
- "500 children at Derry funeral", <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Sept. 8th, 1971.

- 40. Alain Cass, "Ulster The Violent Playground", <u>Scottish</u> <u>Daily Express</u>, Dec. 9th, 1971.
- 41. John Heilpern, "Children of Ulster", The Montreal Star, Dec. 24th, 1971.
- 42. Both direct quotations from semi-projective techniques used during the Primary School Survey, 1972.
- 43. "Women force 'stone throw' bus to stop", <u>Belfast</u> <u>Telegraph</u> May 18th, 1972.
- 44. "Now 'chicken' game goes psychedelic", Sunday News, March, 26th, 1972.
- 45. "Mothers scoff at child bomb reports", Belfast Telegraph, Oct. 11th, 1971.
- 46. "Fighting a foe they can't kill", <u>The Montreal Star</u>, Sept. 29th, 1971.
- 47. The Guardian, Feb. 7th, 1972.
- "Boy of 12 planted Co-op bomb", <u>Belfast Welegraph</u>, Oct. 1, 1971.
- 49. "Boy (13) for trial on arms charge", <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, March, 8th, 1972.
- 50. "Schoolboy (14) with two men on guns charge", <u>Belfast</u> Telegraph, March 22nd, 1972.
- 51. "Soldier shot in Belfast ambush bled to death", <u>Belfast</u> Telegraph, July, 22nd, 1971.
- 52. "16-year-old boy shot busman witness", <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Iay 16th, 1972.
- 53. "Weekend of mob rule and death", Belfast Telegraph, May, 1st, 1972.
- 54. Bruno Bettelheim, "Individual and Mass Behaviour in Extreme Situations", in E.E. Maccoby <u>et al</u>, <u>Readings in Social Psychology</u>, 3rd ed. (New York: Holt, Rinehart, and Winston, 1958).
- 55. <u>An Firinne</u> (The Truth) No.17, (Seasus Burns and Charles Hughes Sinn Fein: Cumann).
- 56. "Bill and Benn, the IRA Men", Loyalist News, Jan.8th,1972.
- 57. "Synod hears praise for young", Belfast Telegraph, May, 16th, 1972.
- 58. "Mental Illness and the Troubles", John McPhilemy quoting Dr. Alex Lyons, <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, Sept., 30th, 1971.
- 59. "The Ulster of my Youth", John Rooks, <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, July, 5th, 1971.

.

- 60. "The Children who live with the riots", Michael Murphy, Belfast Telegraph, April 8th, 1971.
- 61. Richard Rose, Governing without Consensus, pp. 192-93.

.

62. "Government White Paper" Loyal Orange Institution of Ireland. Advertisement, <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, May 2nd, 1973.

#### Chapter V School Influences.

Children are not only instructed in vocational skills, but are also taught the cultural norms, and expectations of the society of which they are becoming adult members. This includes political expectations and behaviours.

Two reasons why greater emphasis has been placed upon formal education in this century may be that technological understanding is seen as a vehicle of national economic development and because new nations, in particular see education as a prime tool in nation building. Generally speaking, the newer the nation the greater the emphasis given to formal instruction in 'civics'.

The Soviet Union and the United States are examples of societies in which education is consciously directed to political ends. In the U.S.S.R. the schools offer a communistic view of national and international affairs, teach love of the motherland, and are responsible for developing an outlook emphasising comradeship, collective action and loyalty to the Party. The education system in the U.S.S.R. aims at "the formation of behaviour, character, and traits of personality necessary to the Soviet State".<sup>1</sup> The U.S.A. has long used civic instruction in the schools to increase loyalty towards America. Whilst the integrative-consensual model (melting-pot) still predominates in America it has been broadened to include communism and democracy, international relations, world citizenry, and comparative politics. In England, as representative of

Ch.V - p.2

of older nations, where are still relatively few schools giving instruction in 'civics' or government. Nevertheless, the teaching of history, emphasising acceptable national traits, helps young people adjust to adult life. Such teaching emphasises the political community and constitution thus reinforcing love of country and form of government. English education also anticipates the roles children are expected to play in adult life through the different emphasis given to participation in public affairs in the segregated school systems.

Older nations have less need to emphasise loyalty in the curriculum. Loyalty has been built up over the centuries and parents pass such attitudes to their children because they generally cannot conceive of doing anything else. Northern Ireland presents the problem of parts of two older nations being ruled by one new state. The problem is further complicated by the presence of a sizeable minority witholding allegiance to the new state and passing on such attitudes to their children. Moreover, two sets of schools are organised along lines broadly paralleling differences about the Constitution and the Nation and there is no agreement whether all schools should, or could, teach the same political values.

The aims of civic education in the schools, whether imparted through history, moral and religious instruction, or 'civics', are knowledge of government, constitution and nation; acquaintance with what government expects of citizens and what activities citizens should expect of government; and loyalty towards government, constitution and nation. The content of such knowledge and attitudes depends largely upon the definition of citizenship in the country concerned and upon the roles children can anticipate in adult life. Thus, in one country, a citizen is a rational-activist who blends the right of participation in politics with concern for the whole nation; elsewhere, the citizen is someone who works hard and knows and loves Marxian dialectics; or he may be someone who, whilst sharing equality of loyalty with all, emphasises inequality of public service and knows how to 'keep his place' and look up to his 'betters'. In Northern Ireland there is no agreed definition of 'citizen'. Before the Queen's Silver Wedding anniversary in 1972 all the schools in Northern Ireland received a circular from the Ministry of Education:

> Her Majesty the Queen has expressed a wish that all schools and colleges will take a holiday on November twentieth. The Ministry is confident that effect will be given to Her Majesty's gracious wish by schools and colleges in Northern Ireland.

Although some Catholic schools decided to close others were undecided. The headmaster of one school is reported as saying, "We are looking for some sort of agreement with other schools. The majority seem to be in favour of opening but no final decision has been taken."<sup>2</sup> Although many Protestants have rated Catholics as second class citizens the indecision of Catholic schools over their action on the Queen's Silver Wedding anniversary causes many Protestants to wonder whether Catholics are citizens at all. Such indecision in Protestant eyes amounts to disloyalty and exclusion from the State. Catholics in Northern Ireland certainly support the government more for material than symbolic reasons.<sup>3</sup> Thus, different citizenship patterns emerge by nationality and religion. These differences occur outwith the schools. Perhaps Catholic schools, staffed by Catholics, cannot or will not teach the same civic values as Protestants and cannot prepare pupils for roles in society which have previously been closed to Catholics. For instance, it took 50 years of Unionist government in Northern Ireland before a Catholic was admitted to the Cabinet. Protestants, on the other hand, may have difficulty in preparing their children for anything but a dominant role in Ulster politics.

The values and beliefs that young people have by the time they leave school may be less a function of what they were taught in school than of what they were like before they came to school, or of what happens outside the confines of the school. Parental influence is always likely to be strong especially when very basic values are concerned and the apparent effectiveness of the school in socializing values may depend, to a great extent, upon the 'fit' between school teaching and other socializing agents. Where the school builds on preexisting predispositions to accept the content of civic instruction they appear to be successful in creating the attitudes they set out to create. But success is only minimal. Where the parents have induced predispositions hostile to the content of school civics the attitudes the school wishes to create becomes more difficult to attain. Should they work against the parents or serve the community of which the parents form a part? Thus effectiveness of school civic instruction relies heavily upon the congruence of political learning experiences. Schools in Northern Ireland, endeavouring to increase allegiance to the State may be besett with ultraloyal attitudes on one hand and rebellious predispositions on

the other. If this is the case then the schools will be particularly ineffective agents of civic learning if full allegiance is the definition of citizen employed.

In this chapter political learning in the schools will be investigated under the headings: (1) the formal curriculum and the teachers; (2) the social atmosphere of the schools; (3) the length of exposure to school influences and educational aspirations.

# (1) The Curriculum and the Teachers.

(a) Civics

At Secondary school level research findings on the association between civics courses and political learning have been mixed. Edgar Litt found that civics courses had little impact upon students' attitudes towards political participation." Langton and Jennings found ... "... not one single case out of the ten examined in which the civics curriculum was significantly associated with students' political orientations".5 But when white and black students were analysed separately, the blacks who had taken one or more civics course were found to have more political knowledge, and ideological sophistication, a greater sense of political efficacy, and a higher level of civic tolerance, than those who had taken no courses. The explanation offered for the different response between blacks and whites to civics courses was that for the whites such courses provide reduntant information whilst for the blacks they produced new perspectives. Mercer, reporting on the responses of 2,400

Scottish secondary school pupils concluded that, "The influence of Modern Studies on the development of higher feelings of political efficacy among our adolescent population attending secondary schools is a myth".<sup>6</sup> A French study noted negative relationships between civic instruction and political attitudes. French pupils in the Village in the Vancluse learned from civic textbooks that the French government was simply the concrete manifestation of the state, which was the political personality of the Nation. Whilst they had no difficulty in accepting loyalty to the French Nation, they were taught outside of school, to think of government as made up of "weak, selfish, stupid, ambitious men" and that it was the "duty of citizens not to cooperate with these men, as the civics books would have people do, but rather to hinder them, to prevent them in every possible way from increasing their power over individuals and over families". 7

Civic education in Northern Ireland is given mainly through history and religious education. There are, however, a number of schools where 'civics' is recognised as a subject on the curriculum. This often takes the form of 'International Studies', 'British Constitution', 'Current Events', and 'Modern Studies'. There are very real difficulties associated with teaching politics in the Ulster schools. If the subject is approached in a traditional manner emphasing political structures rather than political interaction pupils may soon lose interest finding few links between what they are taught and the dynamic political processes at work in their society. If, on the other hand, the teacher becomes involved in teaching current politics he runs the risk of providing his

Ch.V - p.6

own solutions rather than approaching the subject in a neutral manner. (Are there any neutrals in Ulster?) Also there is a tendency in Northern Ireland schools to avoid politics altogether because this involves violence. If the schools are to be '...a haven of security and normality' as a report from the Ministry of Education<sup>8</sup> suggests they have been, then politics must be avoided or prohibited.

Only nine per cent of the boys I saw in the Grammar schools were said to receive specific civic education. Only one Primary headmaster emphasised that civic instruction was given regularly to his children. Approximately one quarter of the boys in the Intermediate schools received formal 'civics' in their school curriculum thus presenting a good basis for the investigation of the possible effects of 'civics' upon political attitudes.

Since previous research about the effectiveness of civics courses upon political attitudes seems inconclusive, or negative, one might hypothesise that no differences in civic outlooks will occur between boys in Secondary Intermediate schools who do, and do not, receive civics classes. Alternatively, bearing in mind the Langton and Jennings finding upon the possible effects of civics courses upon American blacks<sup>9</sup> one might wish to hypothesize that Catholics who take civics courses will meet with less redundant material than Protestants and become more positive towards the political system in Northern Ireland. Alternatively, if what Catholics are taught about civics is incongruent with community views of political

Ch.V - p.8

processes then 'civics' may have little, no, or a negative effect.

In fact, receiving formal instruction in 'civics' has few effects for Intermediate schoolboys in Northern Ireland. The difference index only rises to 11 per cent between Catholic boys regarding discord with the boys receiving 'civics' being readist to reject the use of violence for a United Ireland. Ironically, Protestants who receive civics courses are slightly more violent in outlook. Among both Protestants and Catholics 'civics' makes no difference to how a boy feels about government.

Civic studies which are incongruent with the on-going political life of a country are unlikely to influence the political attitudes of those undergoing instruction. Incongruence may take the form of being unrelated: in the words of Professor Crick, "...to teach the Constitution is like teaching elementary anatomy or biology instead of the nature of sexuality."<sup>10</sup> Incongruence between 'civics' and politics may take the form of direct conflict as witnessed in the children of <u>The Village in the Vancluse</u>: teaching British Constitution to the sons of Republicans may encourage them to join the IRA.

Efforts have been made recently to bring Ulster courses in 'civics' into line with actual political developments. The "Ulster in Your Hands"<sup>12</sup> simulation endeavours to put pupils into political situations and, using the materials provided, asks them to choose which decisions they would make. The General Studies project presents facts about basic political problems like the Constitution, but includes divergent attitudes for discussion.<sup>13</sup> Perhaps these methods, and others like them, will bring about greater congruence between school 'civics' and politics. This may result in more disorder as the political games resulted in some boys building barricades as the only feasible option. Commenting on the General Studies projects one teacher reported that not a single pupil altered previously held opinions through using them. "On reffection it seems to me that this is really to be expected because it will only be through experience that attitudes will be changed and there is absolutely nothing in their experience at this moment to give them any reason to question their own attitudes."<sup>14</sup>

(b) School History and Historical Interests

School courses in National history tend to select episodes of the past that emphasise national glory. Where discord exists about such basic political values as the nation, various aspects of history will be stressed depending upon the prevailing community view of past and present. A country may have two glorious pasts when groups within one country have different nationalistic aspirations, different ancestors, different anniversaries, different national heroes and battles. Even if history is not consciously used for political purposes, as a school subject, one cannot avoid political values in the study of how one's state developed, in providing past insights into current political affairs, and in tracing the growth of democratic or other political practices.

Ch.V - p.9

In some Communist countries the political use of school history is clearly acknowledged where, "The study of modern history plays a very important part in the education of the young Soviet patriots, ready selflessly to defend its achievements ... it is of great importance in the formation of the Communist world outlook among pupils."<sup>15</sup> In America, "The study of the nations past is considered by many and with good reason, one of the best means of reinforcing national unity and of instilling love of country and patriotic devotion.<sup>16</sup> After extensive research in Canada it was claimed that history teaching, in particular, is leading young English and French-speaking Canadians to have two entirely different sets of national values.<sup>17</sup> The content of secondary school teaching of history in England is generally dominated by political history with great emphasis on the development of government, especially in the last 150 years. Traces of the older colonial outlooks are still visible: many primary school histories give the impression that South African history began with the European settlement and admit white supremacy. 18

In 1926 the government of the Irish Free State announced that its educational policy was "the strengthening of the national fibre by giving the language, history, music and traditions of Ireland their natural place in the life of the schools."<sup>19</sup> John Magee comments:

> It is understandable that a new state, itself the creation of the physical force tradition and the Gaelic cultural revival, should want to emphasise its national identity and to inculcate a respect for the history and tradition of the people. In practice, however, the policy had a restrictive and illiberal tendency. "In the primary schools only

Irish history was taught, and, although in the secondary schools the programme was widened to include some aspects of the history of Western Europe, Britain with whom Ireland had been linked for so long was deemed not to exist at all. The textbooks used in Irish history were impregnated with a spirit of exaggerated nationalism, with its stress on war and hatred of the enemy. 20

Under the influence of the report of a study group set up by Comh Comhairle Fianna Fail to examine the teaching of history in the schools of Eire a wider view of history teaching was encouraged. A new curriculum for primary education (1969) warned the history teacher that:

> The history of his own country has a special appeal for the child and it is rich in examples of the highmindedness of his forebears. But to limit his knowledge to examples taken exclusively from the activities of his own people is to give him an unbalanced view of reality and a distorted vision of history. Local and national pride is certainly to be cultivated but whenever the belief is fostered that any national struggle is consistently a war between the forces of good and evil the child is left open to the saddening experience of subsequent disillusionment.<sub>21</sub>

Yet as recently as 1972 Dr. Conner Cruise O'Brien, speaking in Dail (23-2-72) asked if schools in Eire were responsible for turning out "little IRA men". He said, "...some of our teachers and some of our schools are producing in the guise of patriotism a narrow, fanatical form of nationalism which makes a target of a particular country and people."<sup>22</sup> School history in Eire, emphasising a 32 county United Ireland and referring to Northern Ireland as the "six Counties", has probably reinforced negative feelings towards Britain and sympathy for the "suppressed" Irish in the "lost" Counties of Ulster.

If school history in Eire involves models of a United Ireland suggesting the abolition of the Border, one might expect

school history in Northern Ireland to present "defence" and "subversion" models according to Nationality. When 1,000 children in Londonderry, Northern Ireland, were asked to name the country in which their City was situated 67 per cent of Catholics replied "Ireland" and 63 per cent of Protestants "Northern Ireland". The leader of the project team asserted that such findings"...revealed attitudes which may well have been formed in the history classroom".23 Commenting on the Ulster 71 Exhibition in Belfast which was said to be nonpolitical Barry White said, "If so, it will be the first nonpolitical event in Northern Ireland for at least 300 years. Just to tell the history of the place is political--why else would Irish history be expunged from the ordinary school curriculum?"<sup>24</sup> Writing of how the schooldays of children in Northern Ireland could separate them from each other Barrit and Carter stated that:

> As a broad generalization, the non-Catholic schools teach English history, as being a well-established discipline with good text-books, which tells children about their own country (which is the United Kingdom). Irish history is therefore taught as incidental to English history. Catholic schools are more likely to teach Irish history in its own right, and to treat it as the story of heroism in maintaining national feeling under foreign rule.25

ş -

The courses prescribed by the Ministry of Education for the Junios and Senior Certificate examinations placed an emphasis upon British and modern European history and the textbooks in general use had their Ifish history compressed into one or two chapters. John Magee comments: "The impression generally was that Ulster childran could be educated as if they were living in Chelmsford or Bristol or Haverford West."<sup>26</sup> Examinations made it imperative that pupils should study British history. Knowledge of Irish history could widen a student's choice of questions, but was insufficient to pass an examination. Some schools, however, have widened the scope of teaching to include Irish history without significant British connections. Many Secondary Intermediate schools teach history in the context of the pupils own local environment and BBC programmes have introduced school students to aspects of Irish history otherwise largely ignored.<sup>27</sup> There is some evidence, however, that history has been regarded as the most boring and irrelevant subject in the school curriculum.<sup>28</sup> Thus both confined and more open versions of national history may have little effect upon students' basic political attitudes. Professor Gibson, however, emphasises the importance of teaching Irish history in Ulster's schools in order to understand the position of the Province:

This means, I suspect, amongst other things, that we need to incorporate into our curriculum and teaching programmes as honest and as objective an appreciation of Irish history in its political, religious, aconomic and social aspects as it is humanly possible to devise.20

Implicit in the question of school history and political learning is the assumption of effective transfer of historical learning to political attitudes. In this investigation the problem was approached in three different ways. The first involved asking history teachers and/or principals which national history was <u>mainly</u> taught. Replies could be coded as 'mainly British', 'mainly Irish', 'both British and Irish fairly evenly mixed', 'some other sort of history', and 'no history taught'. The second question about national history was put to the pupils themselves. The same broad categories

# Ch.V - p.14

. . .

were used. A third question, not so closely related to school teaching, involved asking whether or not the boys were interested in history and, if so, which national history <u>mainly</u> interested them.

There are wide differences between Protestants and Catholics regarding the teachers' view of the history curriculum. (Table V:1) For instance, 75 per cent of Protestant primary boys were said to receive instruction mainly in British history to only 44 per cent of Catholic primary boys. Twenty-one per cent of Catholic Grammar boys were given instruction mainly in Irish history whilst no Protestant boys were said to receive this emphasis.

| Table V:1 | Main content | of history | course as | seen by Te | acher |
|-----------|--------------|------------|-----------|------------|-------|
|-----------|--------------|------------|-----------|------------|-------|

|                        | Protestant<br>\$ | Catholic<br>% |                |
|------------------------|------------------|---------------|----------------|
| Primary                |                  |               |                |
| British                | 75               | 44            |                |
| British/Irish          | 25               | 36            |                |
| None                   | -                | 20            | D.I. = 31%     |
| Secondary Intermediate |                  |               |                |
| British                | 35               | 20            |                |
| Irish                  | -                | -             |                |
| British/Irish          | 49               | 55            |                |
| Other                  | 6                | 3             |                |
| None                   | 10               | 22            | <b>d.I 18%</b> |
| Grammar                |                  |               |                |
| British                | 41               | 24            |                |
| Irish                  | -                | 21            |                |
| British/Irish          | 19               | 3             |                |
| Other                  | 15               | 38            |                |
| None                   | 25               | 14            | D.I. = 44%     |

Ch.V - p.15

The school history curriculum as seen by pupils and teachers are not necessarily the same. The attention a boy gives to different aspects of his school history lesson may be a function of his interests. These, in turn, may lead him to believe that the main emphasis of his school history course is rather different that that intended by the teacher. Historical interests may have been acquired outside the school from books not generally used in the class-room and from traditions, poetry, songs, and political and religious pamphlets portraying discordant versions of specific events. Many of these informal channels of historical information may have a greater impact upon a boy's attitudes than school history, especially if they are harmonious with many well established features of the community to which he belongs. Historical interests may also inculcate enthusiasms and prejudices which will remain long after the school history lesson is forgotton and its impact considerably diminished.

· 4 - 2 \*

a\*\* \

# Table V:2 Comparisons of two views of history lessons and historical interests.

7

| PRIMARY PROTESTANTS      |           |            |              |         |        |      |  |  |
|--------------------------|-----------|------------|--------------|---------|--------|------|--|--|
| ć                        | No answer | British    | Irish        | Mixed   | Other  | None |  |  |
| Teachers view \$         | -         | 75         | -            | 25      | -      | -    |  |  |
| Pupils view &            | 2         | 30         | 7            | 28      | 28     | 5    |  |  |
| Pupils interest          | • 14      | 40         | 10           | -       | 20     | 16   |  |  |
|                          | PR        | IMARY CATH | OLICS        |         | r      | e.   |  |  |
| Teachers view \$         | -         | 44         | -            | 36      | -      | 20   |  |  |
| Pupils viewas            | 2         | 91 5       | 28           | 25      | 19     | 17   |  |  |
| Pupils interest          | • 6       | 11         | 47           | -       | 14     | 22   |  |  |
| INTERMEDIATE PROTESTANTS |           |            |              |         |        |      |  |  |
| Teachers view &          | · · · ·   | 35         | <b>•••</b> • | 49      | 6      | 10   |  |  |
| Pupils view &            | 4         | 25         | 6            | 41      | 6      | 18   |  |  |
| Pupils interest          | • 4       | 32         | 27           | -       | 1      | 35   |  |  |
|                          | IN        | TERMEDIATE | CATHOLI      | <b></b> | الم ثر |      |  |  |
| Teachers view %          | -         | 20         | -            | 55      | 3      | 22   |  |  |
| Pupils view %            | 7         | 16         | 14           | 25      | 11     | 26   |  |  |
| Pupils interest          | • 3       | 10         | 56           | -       | 2      | 28   |  |  |
| GRAMMAR PROTESTANTS      |           |            |              |         |        |      |  |  |
| Teachers view %          | · 🗕       | 41         | -            | 19      | 15     | 25   |  |  |
| Pupils view %            | 1         | 34         | 2            | 22      | 12     | 28   |  |  |
| Pupils interest          | 2         | 43         | 20           | -       | 3      | 31   |  |  |
| GRAMMAR CATHOLICS        |           |            |              |         |        |      |  |  |
| Teachers view %          | <b></b>   | 24.        | 21           | 、ع      | 38     | 14   |  |  |
| Pupils view %            | 2         | 7          | 20           | 16      | 35     | 20   |  |  |
| Pupils interest          | 2         | 18         | 54           | -       | 5      | 20   |  |  |

.

.

.

.

Ch.V - p.17

The Primary pupils view of his history lessons and his historical interests are closer together than are the teachers view of the lesson and his (the pubils) idea of it. This suggests that influences outside the school have an important bearing upon how a Primary schoolboy sees his history lessons. Alternatively, one could suggest that teachers may think they are teaching one type of history, but that pupils find it biased in another direction. If this is so, then historical interests, this time the teachers, may be more important in history lessons than is, or can be, formally acknowledged. In the Secondary schools the pupils and teachers' views of the history courses are much closer together. The largest difference between pupil and teacher views of history courses appears in the Catholic Intermediate schools where 55 per cent were said to receive a balanced British/Irish course whereas only 25 per cent of boys thought this was the case. Even if the Secondary pupils have a more accurate perception of the content of their school history lessons their historical interests are not determined by school teaching. (See Table V:2)

a : ´ .

and the second second

How the teacher sees the history lesson.

It might be hypothesized that the teaching of British history would raise the level of positive feeling for the Stormont Government among both Protestants and Catholics since the Government was committed to maintaining the link with Britain and a 'British way of life'. Among Protestant boys in Primary and Intermediate schools those said to receive instruction mainly in British history are slightly more likely to record strong positive feelings about Government (...will waways want to help...) when compared to those receiving a mixture of British/Irish history. But the overall positive affect to Government is similar for both these history groups. There are virtually no differences between Grammar Protestant boys in groups receiving different historical emphases or who take no school history courses. Among Catholics, affect towards Government is slightly more positive among Intermediate school boys who take a mixed British/Irish course compared to those who take a mainly British course.

It might also be hypothesized that teaching mainly Irish history to Catholic boys will be associated with low positive, and higher negative, affect to Government. This is not borne out.

If school history courses are effective in raising loyalty to government one might hypothesize that those students taking no history classes would be more hostile, or at least, less positive, in their outlook upon Government than those who study history at school. This relationship is borne out among Catholic Secondary schoolboys who are more likely to be hostile to Government if they
take no history courses. (Table V:3) Among Protestants, Intermediate schoolboys are only 10 per cent more likely to be a negative to Government where they lack a history course.

Table V:3 Percentage having Negative Affect towards Government among Secondary School Catholics.

|              | Class | No<br>History<br>Class |
|--------------|-------|------------------------|
| Intermediate | 29    | 53                     |
| Grammar      | 29    | 43                     |

If we accept that schoolteachers and principals give a realistic assessment of what is taught in school history classes we are in a position to ask and answer a number of questions. For instance, does the Catholic teacher who teaches mainly Irish history have any influence in undermining the authority of government of Northern Ireland? The answer must be 'no'. Do history teachers, in general, appear to have undermined the Government of Northern Ireland? Again the answer must be 'no' since boys without history lessons are more negative to Government. And finally, does teaching British history increase positive affect to government? Among Protestants - 'perhaps' - but only at the most benevolent (...always wants to help...) level. And among Catholics, teaching the mixed British/Irish course is associated with higher positive affect to government than is the British course.

It could be hypothesized that teaching schoolboys mainly British history would make them less likely to favour violent political solutions since recent British history has involved constitutional

 $Ch.V = p.20^{\circ}$ 

methods of opposition. This relationship may be true for Protestant boys in all schools if they are compared only to those said to receive a mixed British/Irish course. The differences between the two groups are, however, slight.

Only in the Catholic Primary and Grammar Schools were some pupils said to receive courses mainly in Irish history. Such pupils, it might be hypothesized, will be more likely to favour disorder since Ireland has a tradition of violent politics. This relationship does not hold since there are few differences on this question between Catholic pupils said to receive Irish as against other forms of history.

Where boys receive no history courses at school one might expect disorder to be more fully endorsed since such boys have not been instructed in the sometimes peaceful politics of other nations and could be, thus, most open to violent suggestions from the larger community. This may be true for some Catholics. Among those without history courses 75 per cent in the Primary schools, and 80 per cent in the Intermediate schools, favoured political violence for a United Ireland.

The arresting figures emerging concern Catholic history teachers. Those teaching mainly Irish history cannot be blamed for raising the levels of disorder approval in Northern Ireland since [1] Catholic boys said to receive mainly Irish history are no more violent in political outlook than other boys studying history and (2) Catholic boys without history courses are the most disorderly Catholics. How the Schoolboy sees the History Lesson.

One might hypothesize that schoolboys who saw a predominantly British content in their history lessons would give higher positive feelings to government than those perceiving a different emphasis. This is not borne out. Among history groups in the Catholica Intermediate schools, boys who believe that their teacher passes on mainly Irish history are highest in negative feelings for government. (44 per cent negative). However, boys in these schools who reply that they receive no history lesson are just as negative. Catholic history teachers who give the impression that they teach mainly Irish history may have done something to undermine the authority of the Stormont Government. Alternatively, schoolboys may be interpreting their history lessons in the light of popular community views. This is rendered more plausible by the fact that Catholic Intermediate schoolboys without history lessons are just as negative to government as those professing to see an Irish bias in the history class.

Catholic boys in Primary and Intermediate schools who think they receive a British history course are the least violent. For instance, only 33 per cent of Catholic Primary boys in the British category favoured violent politics against 72 per cent who believed their teacher taught Irish history. Seeing an Irish/British content of history lesson may have consequences for political violence among Protestants since, among Primary schoolboys, those feeling they received this mixture were 65 per cent in favour of political fighting to approximately 45 per cent of those who thought they received purely British or another sort of history at school. Although only 30 Protestant Intermediate schoolboys saw Irish as the main burden of their history lessons, all but one of them favoured violence to keep Ulster Protestant. Among Catholic boys in Primary and Intermediate schools those seeing Irish as their central historical curricular concern are clearly the most violent in political outlook. (72 per cent violent).

Have Catholic teachers who give the impression that they teach mainly British history been responsible for raising disorder approval levels? The answer must be 'no' since Catholic boys who feel they receive mainly British history are among the least in favour of violence for a United Ireland. Have Catholic teachers who give the impression that they teach mainly Irish history been responsible for raising disorder levels? The answer may be 'yes' in the Catholic Primary and Intermediate schools. Alternatively, views of school history may be affected by burning outside issues which may be more potent in encouraging disorder for a United Ireland. Have Protestant teachers, who give the impression that they teach a mixed British/Irish history course, rather than a British, been responsible for increased disorder for a Protestant Ulster? In the Primary schools the answer may be 'yes'. Alternatively, the pupil's perceptions of his school course may not be very accurate at the Primary level and he may be imputing to his teacher the British/Ulster emphasis of his community.

Historical Interests.

Schoolboy interest in British history and a heightened positive affect for government appears among Catholic boys in Primary and, to a lesser extent, in Intermediate schools. In the Catholic Primary schools boys showing an interest in British national history are 81 per cent positive in their view of government with 59 per cent being highly positive. In the Protestant Primary schools interest in British history and highest possible affect for government go together where 69 per cent of boys record that 'government would always want to help people like them' and 28 per cent that 'government would sometimes want to help people like them. Primary Catholic children who are interested mainly in Irish history are 20 per cent lower in positive affect to government than those interested mainly in British history. In the Catholic Intermediate schools, boys most interested in Irish history display highest negative affect to government where 40 per cent are negative compared to 22 per cent of those interested in British history and 30 per cent of those not interested in history. The Protestant Intermediate schoolboys with no historical interest reveal lowest Protestant affect for government. (27 per cent hostile).

Protestants with different historical interests, or none, within each school type, reveal striking similarities regarding political violence. Among Catholic groups the differences are larger. (See Table V:3a) Between the groups interested in Irish and British history the difference indexes are 30 per cent in Primary and Intermediate schools and 20 per cent in Grammar schools with those interested in Irish history being most committed to political violence.

| * *, <sup>-</sup>     | Protestants |       |       |                   |         | Catholics |       |                   |
|-----------------------|-------------|-------|-------|-------------------|---------|-----------|-------|-------------------|
| e 14 <sup>1</sup> - 1 | British     | Irish | Other | Not<br>Interested | British | Irish     | Other | Not<br>Interested |
|                       | •           | •     | •     | •                 | *       | •         | ۲     | •                 |
| Primary               |             |       |       |                   |         |           |       |                   |
| Violent               | 59          | 53    | 47    | 50                | 44      | 74        | 43    | 52                |
| Peaceful              | 41          | 45    | 53    | 46                | 54      | 25        | 55    | 47                |
| N.A.                  | -           | 2     | 3     | 4                 | 2       | 1         | 2     | 1                 |
| Intermediate          | 3           |       |       |                   |         |           |       |                   |
| Violent               | 77          | 79    | -     | 78                | 44      | 73        | -     | 55                |
| Peaceful              | 22          | 19    | -     | 17                | 56      | 25        | -     | 43                |
| N.A.                  | l           | 2     | -     | 5                 |         | 2         |       | 2                 |
| Grammar               |             |       |       |                   |         |           |       |                   |
| Violent               | 57          | 56    | -     | 50                | 40      | 60        | •••   | 48                |
| Peaceful              | 40          | 43    | -     | 46                | 57      | 39        | •••   | 49                |
| N.A.                  | 3           | 1     | -     | 4                 | 3       | 1         |       | 3                 |

Table V:3a Interest in History and Discord

In general, the pupils who receive history of any type within their<sup>1</sup> curriculum are better disposed towards government than those lacking it. Thus, whatever the particular dangers of teaching history in Ulster schools may be, it is less dangerous for government than omitting the subject altogether. An increased interest in British history in the Protestant Primary schools seems associated with very high levels of positive affect to government. This, however, may be due more to the influence of parents than teachers. The Catholic history teachers who openly admit that Irish history is mainly taught in their schools may be helping to increase co-operation between communities in Northern Ireland

٠.,

by off-setting the more divisive community interpretations of history. Interest in Irish history, which is open to community influence, is particularly associated with lower positive affect to government and increased disorder approval for a United Ireland. Teaching Irish history in the Catholic schools appears to be on the side of restraint.

Ch.V = p.25

Irish Language.

In the Catholic Primary and Intermediate schools surveyed, approximately 40 per cent of boys received instruction in Irish language compared to 70 per cent in the Grammar schools. If the Irish language is closely associated with a United Ireland we might expect Catholic boys receiving such instruction to have low positive affect for a government that stood for partition and, also, to be readier than others to endorse the use of violence in ending the Border. In the Strathclyde adult sample (1968) 39 per cent of Catholics had been taught the Irish language at school, 29 per cent of whom still endorsed the Northern Ireland Constitution. There was "...only a very slight tendency to favour illegal demonstrations among Catholics taught Irish." Richard Rose comments that, "This finding is striking, inasmuch as Irish language classes can be recruiting grounds for the IRA and other Republican groups."<sup>30</sup>

In the schoolboy surveys striking differences regarding affect to government only appear in the Primary schools (D.I.194) where those receiving Irish language are much more hostile to political authority. But in each school type those having Irish language in their curriculum are more violent in political outlook although the difference in the Grammar schools, where the greatest numbers study Irish, is small (D.I. 74). In Primary and Intermediate schools the differences are larger (D.I. 204). Approximately 70 per cent of Primary schoolboys, and 75 per cent of Intermediate schoolboys, who had classes in Irish at school, approved of violence for a United Ireland.' (See Table V:4)

(c)

| Table V:4 | Political  | Discord | and | Irish | Language |
|-----------|------------|---------|-----|-------|----------|
|           | (Catholics | only).  |     |       |          |

|              | Takes classes in Irish | No classes in Irish |
|--------------|------------------------|---------------------|
|              | ٦                      | •                   |
| Primary      |                        |                     |
| Violent      | 69                     | 53                  |
| Peaceful     | 25                     | 46                  |
| No answer    | 6                      | 1 D.I 21%           |
| Intermediate |                        |                     |
| Violent      | 75                     | 56                  |
| Peaceful     | 25                     | 42                  |
| No answer    | -                      | 2 D.I 194           |
| Grammar      |                        | ·                   |
| Violent      | 55                     | 48                  |
| Peaceful     | 43                     | 49                  |
| No answer    | 2                      | 3 D.I. = 7%         |

It is possible to suggest that, especially in the Primary and Intermediate schools, teaching Irish language may have some effect in making it more likely that a boy will endorse violence in order to achieve a United Ireland. If this is so, then one must also consider that other influences either in Grammar schools, or in the backgrounds of Grammar school children and young people, make it unlikely that there will be associations between Irish language and violence in political discord.

Irish language is not only a major educational difference between Catholics and Protestants, but it is a difference associated with disorder. That these differences

should exist in some Catholic schools gives credence to the belief that 'Irish language classes can be recruiting grounds for the IRA and other Republican groups'. That Catholic adults who were taught Irish at school are only slightly more rebellious in political outlook than those Catholics receiving no such instruction suggests that recruits through this means are lost as they grow older. This may be because the language is not in current use in Northern Ireland and interest in it wanes, or because the Gaelic revival is disassociated from violence among many adults. Alternatively, many Catholic adults may have revised their beliefs about political violence since 1968. Perhaps if Protestant children were taught Irish language Catholics would not associate it with violence. Where the language is taught as part of a national heritage special emphasis could be laid upon the peaceful restoration of Gaelic culture. Alternatively, if the Irish language is taught to foster Republicanism, some success has been achieved.

(d) Respect for Teachars

The schoolteacher's influence is not confined to the formal curriculum, but straddles the classroom, school, and community. As one of the first extra-familial authorities the child meets, the schoolteacher receives a lot of respect, especially from the youngest children. School-beginners also see older children deferring to the teacher and may have heard him/her mentioned with respect in the larger community. Schoolteachers therefore have several large bases of respect. When 330 school-leavers were asked how they rated teachers it was found that, 'Children rate a teacher's ability to teach more highly than personal qualities. They like teachers who, among other things, are kind, friendly helpful and fair. They dislike teachers who, among other things, use sarcasm, have favourites, and fail to provide for the needs of individual pupils."<sup>31</sup>

The question investigated in connection with respect for teachers is whether or not such respect, or disrespect, is generalized to political attitudes. When Primary and Secondary students in East Africa were asked who had taught them the most about being a good citizen of their country-parents and relations, political leaders, religious leaders, or teachersthey overwhelmingly chose their teachers.<sup>32</sup> In this case it is extremely likely that respect for a teacher and political authority would go together. But in a country where teachers have to take an oath of allegiance before being allowed to teach in State recognized schools, and where

Ch.V - p.29

discord exists in politics, one cannot be so certain that teacher and political respect will follow similar lines: The opposite may be the case. For instance, a Primary teacher in Northern Ireland was described in his death notices as a staff officer of the Official IRA.<sup>33</sup> It is unlikely that teacher respect, in this case, would generalize to respect for the Stormont government.

In the schools in Ulster respect for teachers is very high: Only a small minority say that it is not very, or not at all, important to do whatever a teacher says: Seventythree per cent of the Primary boys felt that it was very importand to do whatever a teacher said, and 46 per cent felt this way in the Secondary schools: But different levels of respect towards teacher and government is obvious: When exactly the same question regarding respect was focussed upon government, the following results were obtained

Protestants Catholics Respect level Great Lot Little None NA Great Lot Little None NA PRIMARY 73 7 1 61 21 5 11 2 Teacher 😜 16 3 5 Government \$ 66 20 5 8 2 28 22 13 32 SECONDARY Teacher % 46 39 7 1 8 1 7 .44 38 9 Government & 48 32 10 25 36 9 1 20 18 1

The difference indexes between teacher and government respect levels reach only seven per cent in the Protestant schools where something could be made of school to polity attitude transferance. On the other hand, the difference indexes between school and polity respect are high for Catholic schoolboys (33% for Primary and 22% for Secondary boys). In the Cathlic schools there is little evidence of transference of attitudes from one authority to another. Dawson and Prewitt suggest that one major reason why teachers operate effectively as conveyers of consensus values is that they are the "products of the same political socialization for which they serve as agents."<sup>34</sup> They may equally well operate as conveyers of discordant values where they are the products of conflicting socialization patterns.

It might be hypothesized that high respect for teachers will positively correlate with benevolent affect for government and peaceful political discord. Also, that low respect for teachers will tend to go with hostility to government and political violence. There are, however, few differences on these political variables between boys who have great or, a lot of, respect for teachers. The most obvious characteristic about teacher respect levels is to be found among the minority of boys with little, or no, respect for teachers. They are, among both Protestants and Catholics, the most likely to render hostile affect to government. In almost every case there is a general rise in the tendency to be violent in political outlooks from great respect to the little, or no, respect categories. (See Table V.6) Whatever their school, boys may be influenced in rejecting disorder by teachers whom they respect.

| Table V:6   | Respect | for | Teache   | r and | Politica  | al D | iscord       | -    |
|-------------|---------|-----|----------|-------|-----------|------|--------------|------|
|             |         | Pro | testant: | 3     | Catholics |      |              |      |
|             | Croat   | Lot | Little   | Nona  | Great     | Iot  | Little       | None |
| •           | £       | 8   | ŧ        | \$    | ş         | 8    | <b>8</b> (s) | 8    |
| PRIMARY     |         |     |          |       | 4         |      |              |      |
| Violent     | 47      | 50  | 87       | 72    | 58        | 54   | 72           | 86   |
| Peaceful    | 51      | 45  | 13       | 24    | 41        | 43   | 28           | 14   |
| No answer   | 2       | 5   | -        | 4     | . 1       | 3    | <b>••</b> .  | -    |
| INTERMEDIAT | 5       |     |          |       | ~d        |      |              |      |
| Violent     | 71.     | 78  | 89       | 92    | 56        | 61   | 78           | 84   |
| Peaceful    | 24      | 18  | 8        | 8     | 43        | 37   | 20           | 14   |
| No answer   | 5       | 4   | 3        | -     | 1         | 2    | 2            | 2    |
| CRAMMAR     |         |     |          |       |           |      |              |      |
| Violent     | 51      | 51  | 77       | 78    | 50        | 52   | 58           | 85   |
| Peaceful    | 48      | 45  | 23       | 17    | 47        | 45   | 35           | 15   |
| No answer   | - 1     | 4   | -        | 5     | · 3       | 3    | 7            | -    |

The reason why rebellious and ultra-loyal political attitudes should appear with greater frequency among boys with little or no respect for teachers are probably best known to the teachers themselves. One headmaster felt quite sure which boys would engage in rioting based on his knowledge of their disorderly school behaviour. Such boys tend to come from disadvantaged home backgrounds. Although they are in a minority in any school they are disproportionately violent in political outlook. This may be a function of a very general social violence. The hooligan hypothesis of disorder in Ulster may hold for these boys. This will be followed up in another section when peer groups are considered. (e) Lay or Religious Teachers.

The schoolteacher may influence the political attitudes of schoolboys by the social system he attempts to establish in the classroom and school. Schools are often said to be more or less 'democratic' or 'authoritarian' depending upon how much freedom to participate in school decisions and discipline is emphasised. In Northern Ireland the Christian Brothers have a reputation for strict discipline as well as hospitality. Also, many of such teachers have been trained in

Eire hence the charge of being 'seedbeds of Republicanism' has been leveled at the CBS Schools in particular. Whiast it might be hypothesized that a Catholic boy educated in a school with a religious head and part religious staff (religious schools) may be more in favour of a United Ireland than Catholics in lay schools it must also be borne in mind that religious schools may be more effective in restraining violence.

In this sample, half of the Catholic Primary, one third of the Intermediate, and all the Grammar boys attended religious schools. Two of the Grammar schools were not CBS, but had a priest in charge and some priests on the staff. As far as affect towards government is concerned differences between boys attending lay and religious schools are slight. There are few differences regarding violence in the Primary schools, but Catholic Intermediate schoolboys attending CB schools are more likely to endorse violence for a United Ireland than those attending lay Catholic Intermediate schools. (74 per cent approved violence in religious schools to 58 per cent in lay schools). It is only fair to point out, however, that half the boys in religious Intermediate schools in the sample were drawn from an area experiencing disorder at first hand: Thus their higher approval of violence may be more a function of community disorder than Christian Brother influence. When <u>all</u> the Catholic Secondary schoolboys are split between lay and religious schools virtually no differences occur regarding emotional feelings for government or attitudes to discord. Thus, whilst religious leadership in a school may not promote violence it may not be able to restrain it.

(2) The Social Atmosphere of the School

and the second second

1 0 12

• •

(a) Social Structure

Children find their place in society through interacting with the people immediately around them and by noting how their most immediate group reacts to other groups in society. Going to a Grammar or Secondary Modern (Intermediate) school introduces the schoolboy to a group from which fairly well defined behaviours are expected. Belonging to a Grammar or Intermediate school, high or low stream groupings, may predispose children to act in specific ways which are related to the expectations of the larger society. Thus, the structures of educational institutions are related to political attitudes. For instance, Abramson found a relationship between nonselection at the age of eleven and a low sense of political efficacy.<sup>35</sup>

Ch.V - p.34

Selection on the basis of ability may fit children to fill certain roles in the social system, but it may also create a sense of failure in individual children. One 'failure' said, "When I failed (the 11+) it was terrible. My parents tried not to show me they were disappointed, but I knew they were. I think they assumed an inferiority complex straightaway." Another was 'shattered' by the results of the examination: "I always wanted to teach, even in Primary school days. I used to play at teaching and I was very conscious of the fact that I had failed the eleven plus.<sup>36</sup> On the other hand, one first year High schoolboy said he never really worried about the 11+ "because everyone went to the same school even if into different classes."<sup>37</sup>

Because Grammar schoolboys are the most likely to have a middle class background and to anticipate filling leading roles in society it might be hypothesized that they will be more positive to government and less likely to endorse disorder than Intermediate schoolboys. In fact, higher positive affect among Grammar boys is only evident among Protestants. (See Table IV:3) Solidarity between Catholic Grammar and Intermediate boys regarding government may be explained as a function of the views of the larger Catholic community at the time the Secondary Sample was collected. Whether a Catholic supported the S.D.L.P. or either branch of the IRA he was likely to hold roughly similar views of the Stormont Government. In the case of Protestants, however, political disputes created two major groups in early 1971. The Democratic Unionist Party (which was predominantly lower middle and working class) and the Unionist Party. Protestant variation to government by school type may

therefore be partly explained as a function of school structure reflecting social class differences.

The expectation that Grammar school boys would have less violent views of political opposition than Intermediate boys is borne out for both Protestants and Catholics. Whilst only half of the Grammar boys endorsed disorder this was thought right by 77 per cent of Protestants and 64 per cent of Catholics in Intermediate schools. (See Table IV:4) This may be explained as a function of the 'rougher' background of many Intermediate boys, but it may also be partly the result of a sense of 'institutionalized failure'. Such boys may realize that their adult occupational positions are maready fixed in lower income brackets. Feeling they have less to lose by the effects of disorder may make it all the more likely that they will engage in it.

b e t ·

r. .7

· ••

e de la companya de l

, <del>~</del>

20 A A

Ch. 1 + 1. 74

#### (b) Streaming

A boy's future position in the social system may be effected at school, not only by the type of school he attends, but also by his placement within a school stream. One Ulster teacher stressed that the abolition of the ll-plus did not necessarily mean the end of social and economic sagregation and that, 'the pressures of the educational system could enforce divisions between Grammar and Secondary Modern streams of a single school which were just as watertight as those between separate schools."<sup>38</sup> Moreover, divisions into school streams also takes place in Primary schools although it is more difficult to detect at this level.

Much research on the effects of streaming has concentrated upon attainments. For instance, Svensson found that whilst streaming has no effect upon the attainment of more able pupils, it tends to lower the attainments of the less able.<sup>39</sup> Research findings indicate that streaming tends to be 'selfconfirming'. Whereas the attainments of pupils placed in upper streams improved, that of those placed in lower streams deteriorated.<sup>40</sup>

Two aspects of streaming are investigated in this study: (1) the possible effects of the existence of streaming in a school year upon political attitudes; (2) differences between ability groups in political orientations. Schools with modified streaming were generally those which, by early 1971, had abolished streaming in the first year of Secondary school. Dividing boys by whether or not there was streaming in their school year produced the following:

|              | Pro           | testants        | Catholics     |                 |  |
|--------------|---------------|-----------------|---------------|-----------------|--|
|              | Streamed<br>N | Unstreamed<br>N | Streamed<br>N | Unstreamed<br>N |  |
| Intermediate | 389           | 89              | 303           | 171             |  |
| Grammar      | 377           | 77              | 320           | 183             |  |

There are few differences of note between boys in streamed and unstreamed school years regarding either affect to Government or disorder. One exception can be found in the Catholic Intermediate schools where boys in the unstreamed years are more violent in political outlook. (See Table V: 7) These findings suggest, that in most cases, streaming, or its absence in a school year, is irrelevant for political attitudes.

| Table V:7 | Attitudes to | Discord | in | Catholic | Intermediate |
|-----------|--------------|---------|----|----------|--------------|
|           | School Years |         |    |          |              |

| ·         | Streamed | Unstreamed |            |
|-----------|----------|------------|------------|
| Violent   | 56       | 77         |            |
| Peaceful  | 41       | 23         |            |
| No answer | . 3      | -          | D.I. = 21% |

On the other hand, in some school years, mixing boys of different abilities in one classroom may have the unintended consequences of raising the level of political disorder. This may be because mixing with boys of higher capabilities has destroyed the selfimage of some of the lower ability boys.

The second aspect of streaming investigated herein is differences between ability groups in political attitudes. Harvey and Harvey, testing the utility of intelligence as a predictor variable in political socialization among 393 American high school

Ci.T - 1.33

students found, among other things, that more intelligent students were less likely to hold Militaristic, Anti-Communist, or Super Patriotic attitudes. Also, the more intelligent students were less likely to manifest authoritarian predispositions. Sense of Relevance of Government and Sense of Citizen Duty were significantly positively correlated with intelligence. Discussing the implications of their findings they suggest that:

> Manipulation of intelligence may provide a more direct approach to broadening individual political skills than the manipulation of S.E.S. or economic well being <u>alone</u>. Politically underdeveloped individuals (or groups of individuals or nations) are probably more easily politicized through increases in the level of education, for example, than through increase in income.41

It is not my purpose to enter the heredity-environment controversy about intelligence or to question the methods by which boys have been placed in different schools, or in different streams in the same school. I will assume that there are intelligence differences between boys in upper and lower streams in school years and investigate what differences if any, appear between them in political attitudes.

Where streaming was said to exist in a Secondary school classes were interviewed from near the top and near the bottom, or the top and bottom classes of the school year. Where streaming was said to have been abolished any two classes in an unstreamed year were chosen.

It is hypothesized that the boys in the upper classes in each school year will reveal higher positive affect for government and be more peaceful in politics than boys in the

Ch.V - p.39

lower streams. This relationship is borne out in most cases. As far as affect for government is concerned, in almost every case there is an association between higher streams and positive affect. (See table V:8) These relationships are, however, much weaker in the Grammar than in the Intermediate In three out of four I.Q. comparison groups in the schools. Intermediate schools, the boys in the upper streams reveal higher positive affect to government. The one exception to this is found in Catholic Intermediate first years where the higher streams are more negative to government (D.I. = 34%). This is caused by 40 per cent of the boys in the higher streams in Catholic Intermediate first years being negatively oriented to government. Variations in attitudes to political discord between ability groups show that, out of the groups compared, in five cases out of eight, the higher ability groups are more likely to favour peaceful political means. (See Table V:9) In two of the three remaining cases where they are less likely to favour violence than the lower streams the differences are small, but in one case the difference rises to 20 per cent where first year Catholic Intermediate boys in higher streams are more in favour of violence.

# Table V:8 Affect to Government and Intelligence

•

|              |              | Protes       | stants       |              | Catholics    |              |              |              |
|--------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|--------------|
|              | Upper<br>4th | Lower<br>4th | Upper<br>1st | Lower<br>1st | Upper<br>4th | Lower<br>4th | Upper<br>1st | Lower<br>lst |
| INTERMEDIATE | 8            | •            | •            | •            | \$           | ۲            | •            | •            |
| POSITIVE     | 29           | 21           | 43           | 33           | 13           | 18           | 8            | 27           |
| positive     | 53           | 47           | 49           | 38           | 55           | 33           | 49           | 43           |
| negative     | 15           | 20           | 8            | 20           | 24           | 23           | 38           | 10           |
| NEGATIVE     | 3            | 7            | -            | 9            | 6            | 19           | 2            | 17           |
| no answer    | -            | 5            | -            | -            | 2            | 7            | 3            | 3            |
|              | D.I.         | = 14%        | D.I.         | - 213        | D.I.=        | 23           | D.I.         | - 34%        |
|              |              |              |              |              |              |              |              |              |
| GRAMMAR      | •            |              |              |              |              |              |              |              |
| POSITIVE     | 34           | 38           | 40           | 30           | 8            | 11           | 14           | 21           |
| positive     | 58           | 54           | 56           | 54           | 49           | 43           | 63           | 53           |
| negative     | 5            | 4            | 4            | 14           | 31           | 32           | 21           | 15           |
| NEGATIVE     | 1            | 2            | -            | 1            | 9            | 13           | 2            | 11           |
| no answer    | 2            | 2            | -            | 1            | 3            | 1            | -            | -            |
|              | D.I.         | × 5€≏        | D.I.         | - 12%        | D.I.=        | 88           | D.I.         | = 16%        |

|              | Protestants |     |      | Catholics    |              |              |      |        |
|--------------|-------------|-----|------|--------------|--------------|--------------|------|--------|
|              |             |     |      | Lower<br>1st | Upper<br>4th | Lower<br>4th |      |        |
|              | •           | . 🔹 | ٩    | •            | ۲            | ٩            | •    | •      |
| INTERMEDIATE |             |     |      |              |              |              |      |        |
| Violent      | 83          | 75  | 69   | 75           | 52           | 63           | 66   | 46     |
| Peaceful     | 16          | 12  | 31   | 25           | 45           | 31           | 34   | 54     |
| no answer    | 1           | 3   | -    | -            | 3            | 6            | -    |        |
|              | D.I.=       | 78  | D.I. | - 61         | D.I.=        | 134          | D.I  | .= 20% |
| GRAMMAR      |             |     |      |              |              |              |      |        |
| Violent      | 48          | 65  | 52   | 47           | 50           | 56           | 42   | 57     |
| Peaceful     | 47          | 31  | 45   | 51           | 44           | 41           | 58   | 43     |
| No answer    | 5           | 4   | 3    | 2            | 6            | 3            | -    | -      |
|              | D.I.=       | 175 | D.I. | = 6%         | D.I.=        | 61           | D.I. | = 15%  |

Table V: 9 Political Discord and Intelligence

In most of the intelligence groups compared there is an association between higher streams and both positive affect for government and peaceful political attitudes. The major exception is in the Catholic Intermediate first year where the higher stream boys were much more negative to government and ready to endorse disorder than lower stream boys. Controlling for area reveals that two-thirds of the lower first year live in some of the most peaceful areas of Ulster where Catholic boys are both more positive to government and least likely to endorse disorder. Thus this reversal of trends between intelligence and political attitudes may be partly explained as a function of the local political environment.

Ch.V - p.42

It seems likely that reduction of violence and higher positive affect to government among higher stream boys is related to greater political sophistication. As noted elsewhere, "..the more able boys tend to have a more institutionalized view of government and the lower I.Q. lads see it in more personal terms."<sup>42</sup> One can invest more hatred upon persons than institutions like government since persons are so much more easily identifiable. Thus, increased levels of education may give greater understanding of institutions, and some of the associated difficulties, making it less likely that boys will hold extreme views of politics or engage in extreme actions. On the other hand, whilst education may help a boy appreciate the good a government does it may also make him a better detector of any political moves likely to set him at a disadvantage.

(c) Social Class Composition of the School

The social class composition of schools probably have some influence upon political attitudes. Proponents and opponents of comprehensive schooling stress that the social class composition of the school may have consequences for social attitudes. A political socialization study carried out in the Caribbean found that working class students who attended mixed social class schools seemed to be 'resocialized in the direction of higher class political norms.<sup>43</sup>

In this investigation the social class of a boy was based upon his father's occupation. Skilled and unskilled manual

workers were assigned to the working class whilst others, including routine white collar workers, were categorized as middle class. The social class composition of the school was obtained by the headmaster's calculations (based on this method of social class categorization) and upon the social class of what was said to be a representative sample of pupips. In the Protestant Grammar schools 22 per cent of boys attended mixed social class schools whilst in the Catholic Intermediate schools this was true of 37 per cent of boys.

It might be hypothesized, following the Oribbean finding, 44 that both working and middle class boys attending mixed social class schools will seem to be resocialized in the direction of the political norms of the other social class. As far as affect to government is concerned there is some slight evidence of resocialization in the Catholic schools, but none among Protestants. Catholic middle class boys who attend mixed social class schools are less positive to government than the middle class norm. And Catholic working class boys attending heterogeneous class schools seem to move away from working class positions regarding government. Among Protestants there is a slight indication of resocialization regarding disorder where both working and middle class boys in heterogeneous class schools tend to leave the position of their social class and move towards one another. In the Catholic mixed social class schools middle class attitudes to violence remain unchanged whilst working class boys seem to become much less violent. (Difference Index between Catholic working class and working class boys in mixed schools is 13 per cent).

```
Table V: 10
```

Attitudes to Discord among Catholic boys in the Working Class compared to those of Working Class Boys in mixed Social Class Schools

|           | Working Class | Working Class boys<br>in mixed schools | 3          |
|-----------|---------------|--|------------|
|           | \$            | \$                                     |            |
| Violent   | 65            | 53                                     |            |
| Peaceful  | 34            | 47                                     |            |
| No answer | 1             | -                                      | D.I. = 13% |

Working class boys may become less disorderly and more positive to government through heterogeneous class schooling, but at the expense of middle class boys becoming less positive and more disorderly. Only in the Catholic mixed social class schools is it possible to say that working class political disorder approval diminishes without increasing rebellion in the middle classes. Whilst comprehensive schooling among Protestants has nothing to lose as far as basic political attitudes are concerned it may, among Catholics, cause some rejection of disorder. (3) Length of Education.

Social science theories emphasise that education

liberalizes. Studies by V.O. Key, and Almond and Verba found that education promoted political participation.<sup>45</sup> S.M.Lipset writes:

> Education presumably broadens a man's outlook, enables him to understand the need for norms of tolerance, restrains him from adhering to extreme doctrines, and increases his capacity to make rational electoral choices.<sub>46</sub>

But knowing that a person is educated does not increase one's chance of predicting which opinions he will hold. As Richard Rose points out:

> In a society in which a regime lacks full legitimacy, it is uncertain what the political consequences of further education might be. Insofar as educational values favour the regime or lead people to jobs which give them a stake in the system, then it could increase support for the Constitution and for peaceful forms of political action. Yet, insofar as it increases understanding, it might lead Catholics or Protestants to the conclusion that only by refusing compliance with basic political laws could they attain desired ends.47

The Loyalty Survey divided respondents into three groups: those with the minimum education required by law; those with secondary education between the ages of 16 and 18; and those with higher education at University, Teacher Training College, or similar institutions. Among Protestants with further education, 30 per cent endorsed political violence as against 49 per cent with secondary education, and 57 per cent with minimum education. No Catholics with further education endorsed the use of violence to Republican ends.<sup>48</sup>

In this investigation two methods are used in relation to length of education. The first, school-year, may be confusing age with education. Nevertheless boys in 4th year of Secondary school have been exposed to nine or ten years of education whilst boys in primary four to only four years of school education. The second measure of length of education used was educational aspirations. One cas ask adults about the total length of their education, but this is not possible with children still undergoing education. One can ask, however, about their educational aspirations and take this as an imperfect indicator of likely length of education. Educational aspirations are likely to have consequences for anticipatory socialization. The boys wishing to leave school at 15/16 are more likely to drift further from the teacher's point of view as they prepare themselves for an adult world in which many beliefs held by their teachers are not highly valued. Those expressing a desire to continue education after the minimal age are more likely to come closer to the more liberal viewpoint of many of their teachers.

### (a) School year

Dividing the sample by school year produces the following figures:

|              | Protest   | tant      | Catholic  |           |  |
|--------------|-----------|-----------|-----------|-----------|--|
|              | Primary 4 | Primary 6 | Primary 4 | Primary 6 |  |
| Primary      | 305       | 256       | 265       | 283       |  |
|              | First     | Fourth    | First     | Fourth    |  |
| Intermediate | 234       | 244       | 266       | 208       |  |
| Grammar      | 238       | 239       | 287       | 216       |  |

Ch.V = p.47

If length of exposure to education libralizes one might hypothesize that the longer the education a boy has undargone the less likelihood there will be of his holding extreme views of government. Reciprocally, the less education a boy has experienced the more likely it will be that he will see government as either extremely benevolent or extremely malevolent. In fact, extremely benevolent views of government (government always wants to help people like me) drop off steadily, for both Catholics and Protestants, from primary four to fourth year Secondary school. Seventy-one per cent of Protestant boys in primary four felt Government was extremely benevolent to 58 per cent in primary six; 36 per cent in first year and 30 per cent in fourth year of Secondary school. Among Catholics the drop in extreme benevolence is from 47 per cent in primary four to 22 per cent in primary six; 21 per cent in first and 12 per cent in fourth year, Secondary school. Protestant numbers taking a malevolent view of government (government wants to hurt people like me) are too small to take into consideration, but Catholic malevolent views of government do not support the hypothesis that extreme views tend to vanish with increased exposure to education. The percentages having a malevolent view of government in Catholic schools are the same in Primary four as in fourth year Grammar school. (Table V:11) Whilst increased exposure to education is associated with a decrease in the propensity to take the most extremely positive views of government much exposure does not also increase the likelihood that Catholics will renounce extremely negative affect. Education may make a government less of a love object without giving some boys any reason to stop hating it.

Table Vill School Year and Affect to Government

.

|              | Protestant           |                | Catholic           |                     |  |  |
|--------------|----------------------|----------------|--------------------|---------------------|--|--|
|              | Primary<br>Four<br>% | Primary<br>Six | Primary<br>Four    | Primary<br>Six      |  |  |
| PRIMARY      |                      |                |                    |                     |  |  |
| POSITIVE     | 71                   | 58             | 47                 | 22                  |  |  |
| positive     | 25                   | 38             | 31                 | 39                  |  |  |
| negative     | 3                    | 2              | 10                 | 24                  |  |  |
| negati ve    | 1                    | 1              | 11                 | 14                  |  |  |
| no answer    | -                    | 1              | 1                  | 1                   |  |  |
|              | First<br>Year<br>%   | Fourth<br>Year | First<br>Year<br>% | Fourth<br>Year<br>S |  |  |
| INTERMEDIATE |                      |                |                    |                     |  |  |
| POSITIVE     | 36                   | 25             | 20                 | 15                  |  |  |
| positive     | 48                   | 50             | 45                 | 46                  |  |  |
| hegative     | 12                   | 18             | 23                 | 24                  |  |  |
| NEGATIVE     | 4                    | 5              | 10                 | 12                  |  |  |
| no answer    | -                    | 2              | 2                  | 3                   |  |  |
| GRAMMAR      |                      |                |                    |                     |  |  |
| POSITIVE     | 37                   | 36             | 22                 | 9                   |  |  |
| positive     | 54                   | 56             | 51                 | 47                  |  |  |
| negative     | 7                    | 5              | 21                 | 31                  |  |  |
| NEGATIVE     | 2                    | 2              | 5                  | 11                  |  |  |
| no answer    | -                    | 1              | 1                  | 2                   |  |  |

,

If length of exposure to education liberalizes then it might be hypothesized that boys in fourth year of Secondary school will be less prome to approve of disorder than boys in primary four. Alternatively, increased political sophistication may lead a boy to conclude that some political goals will only be reached through violence. In the Protestant schools the picture is clearest. Increased exposure to education of a certain type (Primary and Intermediate) is associated with rising levels of disorder approval. (See Table V:12) Grammar schools in both religions are unaffected between first and fourth year and contain the violence approval level around 50 per cent. In the Catholic schools violence approval rises from primary four to primary six and then decreases from first year to fourth year in Intermediate schools. Table V:12 School Year and Discord

|              | Prote              | stant          | Catholic             |                     |  |  |
|--------------|--------------------|----------------|----------------------|---------------------|--|--|
|              | Primary<br>Four    | Primary<br>Six | Primary<br>Four<br>% | Primary<br>Six<br>% |  |  |
| PRIMARY      |                    |                |                      |                     |  |  |
| Violent      | 34                 | 72             | 51                   | 71                  |  |  |
| Peaceful     | 65                 | 27             | 48                   | 29                  |  |  |
| No answer    | 1                  | 1              | 1                    | -                   |  |  |
|              |                    |                |                      |                     |  |  |
|              | First<br>Year<br>% | Fourth<br>Year | First<br>Year<br>%   | Fourth<br>Year<br>S |  |  |
| INTERMEDIATE |                    |                |                      |                     |  |  |
| Violent      | 74                 | 80             | 69                   | 58                  |  |  |
| Peaceful     | 25                 | 14             | 30                   | 39                  |  |  |
| No answer    | 1                  | 6              | 1                    | 3                   |  |  |
| GRAMMAR      |                    |                |                      |                     |  |  |
| Violent      | 52                 | 55             | 52                   | 53                  |  |  |
| Peaceful     | 46                 | 41             | 47                   | 42                  |  |  |
| No answer    | 2                  | 4              | 1                    | 5                   |  |  |

## (b) Educational aspirations

The second measure involving length of education involved asking the boys about their educational aspirations which reflect intended length of exposure to educational influences. This question was <u>not</u> put to boys in primary four since preliminary testing revealed that as many as 50 per cent of them did

Ch.V = p.51.

not attempt to answer this question. Boys in Primary six showed little hesitation in choosing which category fitted their educational aspirations. Dividing the sample in this way produced the following:

#### PROTESTANTS

|              | leave 15/16 | C.S.E. | "0" | 'A'        | Teach | Univ. | Other | N.A. |
|--------------|-------------|--------|-----|------------|-------|-------|-------|------|
| Primary six  | 139         | 4      | 18  | 35         | 5     | 40    | 10    | 1    |
| Intermediate | 236         | 25     | 70  | 69         | 8     | 34    | 32    | 4    |
| Grammar      | 22          | -      | 40  | 97         | 19    | 276   | 18    | 5    |
| CATHOLICS    |             |        |     |            |       |       |       |      |
| Primary six  | 135         | 10     | 8   | 30         | 12    | 58    | 21    | 2    |
| Intermediate | 225         | 32     | 59  | 6 <b>7</b> | 1.3   | 41    | 25    | 12   |
| Grammar      | 20          | 1      | 31  | 66         | 41    | 317   | 23    | 4    |

In what follows boys will be compared in three categories: (1) those wishing to leave school at 15/16; (2) those intending taking either '0' or 'A' Levels, or both: (3) those desiring a University education.

It might be hypothesized that higher educational aspirations will correlate positively with better expectations of governmental treatment. This relationship is borne out in a number of cases (see Table V: 13) Protestant boys in Intermediate schools are more positively oriented to government as their educational aspirations rise, but the increase is not striking. Catholic children in Primary schools become more positive to government as they anticipate a higher education, but there is little variation by educational aspiration in Catholic Intermediate schools. In the Catholic Grammar schools

Ch.V - 1.52

positive affect to government falls off slightly (10%) between boys wishing to take '0' and/or 'A' levels and those wishing to go on to University. Thus the relationship between educational aspirations and affect for government is inconclusive.

| Table V:13 | Educational Aspirations and percentage having |
|------------|---|
|            | Positive affect to government.                |

|              | Protestant |            |       | Catholic |         |       |  |
|--------------|------------|------------|-------|----------|---------|-------|--|
|              | 15/16      | '0'/'A'    | Univ. | 15/16    | '0'/'A' | Univ. |  |
| Primary six  | 95         | 100        | 97    | 55       | 75      | 72    |  |
| Intermediate | 73         | 8 <b>7</b> | 82    | 61       | 61      | 66    |  |
| Grammar      | 86         | 87         | 94    | 50       | 77      | 66    |  |

Higher education, we might expect, will be positively related to more peaceful attitudes to political discord. Or alternatively, that educational aspirations and violence will be positively related due to frustration with peaceful politics. In Primary and Intermediate schools there are few differences to be witnessed in attitudes to discord among those with different educational aspirations. In the Grammar schools some differences are worth noting. For instance, among Protestant Grammar schoolboys violence approval rises from 41 per cent among those wishing to leave school as soon as possible; to 63 per cent among those who aspired to '0'/'A' level examinations and then falls off to 50 per cent among those desiring a University education. Among Catholic Grammar boys wishing to leave at 15/16, 65 per cent approve of disorder to 59 per cent of those aspiring to '0'/'A' levels, and 50 per cent of those wishing to go to University. Thus rejection of violence and higher educational aspirations are

Ch.V - p.53

positively related only among Catholic Grammar schoolboys. Only half of the Protestant and Catholic Grammar boys desiring University education endorse disorder. Alternatively, one could say that as many as half of them approve of peaceful political life.

| Table V: 14 Educational Aspirations and Percentages approving<br>Disorder |       |             |       |       |                 |       |  |
|---|-------|-------------|-------|-------|-----------------|-------|--|
|   | P     | Protestants |       |       | Catholics       |       |  |
|   | 15/16 | '0'/'A'     | Univ. | 15/16 | '0'/' <b>a'</b> | Univ. |  |
| Primary six   | 75    | 69          | 70    | 67    | 70              | 74    |  |
| Intermediate  | 78    | 74          | 76    | 63    | 62              | 66    |  |
| Grammar   | 41    | 63          | 50    | 65    | 59              | 50    |  |
Summary of Affect

In order to summarize the possible influence of educational characteristics upon affect to government two criteria have been used: (1) the characteristic concerned must involve at least ten per cent of the pupils in the school type e.g. ten per cent of Catholic Grammar boys; (2) the characteristic must be associated with a difference index of ten per cent or more from the distribution of affect within the school type concerned. For instance, the distribution of affect for Catholic Primary schools is:

|          | 8  |
|----------|----|
| POSITIVE | 33 |
| positive | 34 |
| negative | 17 |
| NEGATIVE | 12 |
| N.A.     | 4  |

and the distribution of affect for Catholic Primary pupils who think it 'not at all important' to obey a teacher is:

| POSITIVE | 17 |
|----------|----|
| positive | 14 |
| negative | 28 |
| NEGATIVE | 41 |
| N.A.     | -  |

The difference index between the whole Catholic Primary group and those with no respect for a teacher is thus 41 per cent. A difference index of ten per cent or more from the total distribution may signify D.I.'s of 20 per cent from other groups. Where increases (+) or decreases (-) in positive affect to government only concern affect at the 'benevolent' igovernment always wants to help...) level a (B) has been included in the following table.

| CHARACTERISTIC                          | PRIMAR |        | TAPPEDA               | EDIATE        | GRAMMA | 2      |
|---|--------|--------|-----------------------|---------------|--------|--------|
|   |        | -      |                       | Cath.         |        | -      |
| Obedience to Teacher                    | •      | •      |                       | •             |        | •      |
| Fairly important                        | •      |        |                       |               |        |        |
| Not at all important                    |        | 41-    | 27-                   | 21-           | i<br>t |        |
| Not very important                      |        | •      |                       | 13-           | 1      |        |
| Hee tory amportants                     |        |        |                       |               |        |        |
| Irish languago                          |        | 11-    |                       |               |        |        |
| History taught (teac                    | her)   |        | -                     |               | *      |        |
| British/Irish                           | 12-(B) |        | 4<br>                 |               |        |        |
| British                                 |        |        | ł                     |               |        | 14+(B) |
| Irish                                   |        |        |                       |               |        | 11+    |
| None                                    |        |        | 12-                   | 18-           |        |        |
|   |        |        |                       |               |        |        |
| Pupil's perception<br>of history taught |        |        |                       |               |        |        |
| Irish                                   |        | 12-(B) | 6<br>8<br>9<br>1<br>1 | 20-           |        | 13+    |
| British/Irish                           |        |        | ł                     |               |        | 20+(B) |
| None                                    |        | 14+(B) | ì                     |               |        |        |
| Interest in history                     |        |        | •                     |               |        |        |
| Irish                                   | 15-(B) | 12-(B) | ł                     |               |        |        |
| British                                 |        | 26+(B) | ł                     | <b>15+(</b> B | )      |        |
| School stream                           |        |        | i<br>P                |               |        |        |
| <u></u>                                 |        |        | 10                    | 12-           |        | 13-    |
| lower fourth year                       |        |        | 10-                   |               |        |        |
| upper first year                        |        |        | 13+                   |               | 5)<br> | 14+    |
| lower first year                        |        |        | 12-                   | 15+           |        |        |
| Primary Four                            |        | 14+(B) |                       |               |        |        |
| Primary Six                             |        | 15-(B) |                       |               |        |        |
|   |        |        | .                     |               |        |        |

٠

Ch. 7 ~ p. 51

Respect for schoolteachers seems important in the Primary and Intermediate schools. The minority with little or no respect for a teacher are also less positive in their views of government. In this minority there is probably a generalization of disrespect between authorities.

Within the Catholic Grammar schools, boys who receive mainly Irish history in their curriculum are more positive to government than most Grammar Catholics. Receiving British history also involves Catholic Grammar boys in increases in positive affect to government at the most benevolent level. It is, in fact, the Catholic Grammar boys with 'other' and 'no' history courses who are more negative to government. Catholic Grammar teachers who report giving history courses in Irish or British history have not undermined positive affect to government.

In the Intermediate schools of both religions those without history courses are less positive to government, as are Catholics who feel the main burden of their history lesson is Irish history. But Catholic boys who have an interest in British history reveal increases in positive affect at the benevolent level. Thus, as far as government is concerned, one of the most dangerous things to do in Intermediate schools is to omit to teach history to some boys. Giving, or doing nothing to remove, the impression that Irish history is the main burden of history lessons may influence some Catholic Intermediate boys to render negative affect. Trying to interest some Catholic boys in British history may improve outlooks upon government. History characteristics in the Primary schools only concern increases and decreases in positive affect at the benevolent level. But only in these schools is Irish language associated with decreases in positive affect. Irish language may build allegiance to an all-Irish government. Civic education may be regarded as quite successful if it develops the loyalties of the community.

station in 1

Boys in the lower streams of fourth year seem particularly associated with decreases in positive affect to government. Perhaps such boys provide recruits for the paramilitary organizations of Ulster.

# Summary of Discord Attitudes

In this summary the same two criteria will be used as for affect. Beside figures in the following table a (+) represents an increase in disorder approval whilst a (-) means a decrease in violence approval.

| CHARACTERISTIC                          | PRIMA | Y     | INTERMED | NTERMEDIATE     |       | GRAMMAR |  |
|---|-------|-------|----------|-----------------|-------|---------|--|
|   | Prot. | Cath. | Prot.    | Cath.           | Prot. | Cath.   |  |
| Obedience to teacher                    |       |       |          |                 |       |         |  |
| Not at all important                    |       | 26+   | 14+      | 20 <del>1</del> |       |         |  |
| Not very important                      |       |       |          | 14+             |       |         |  |
| Irish language                          |       | 11+   |          | 11+             |       |         |  |
| No history classes                      |       | 15+   | 12-      | 17+             |       |         |  |
| Pupil's perception of<br>history taught |       |       |          |                 |       |         |  |
| British/Irish                           | 14+   |       |          |                 |       |         |  |
| British                                 |       | 26-*  |          | 12-             |       |         |  |
| Irish                                   |       | 15+   |          |                 |       |         |  |
| Interest in history                     |       |       |          |                 |       |         |  |
| British                                 |       | 18-   |          | 22-             |       | 12-     |  |
| Irish                                   |       | 15+   |          |                 |       |         |  |
| Other                                   |       | 18-   |          |                 |       |         |  |
| Not interested                          |       | 10-   |          |                 |       |         |  |
| Primary four                            | 18-   | 11-   |          |                 |       |         |  |
| Primary six                             | 21+   | 11+   |          |                 |       |         |  |
| School stream                           |       |       |          |                 |       |         |  |
| upper first                             |       |       | 12-      |                 |       | 12-     |  |
| lower first                             |       |       |          | 20-             |       |         |  |
| unstreamed first                        |       |       |          | 13+             |       |         |  |
| upper fourth                            |       |       |          | 11-             |       |         |  |
| lower fourth                            |       |       |          |                 | 12+   |         |  |
| Educational aspiration                  |       |       |          |                 |       |         |  |
| 'O' Levels                              |       |       |          | 10-             |       |         |  |
| Religious head/part sta                 | ff    |       |          | 10+             |       |         |  |

\*Characteristic only contains nine per cent of school-type

The importance of lack of respect for a schoolteacher, as with affect, seems an important predictor of attitudes to discord. Those with little or no respect are readiest to endorse political disorder. Approval of disorder within school and in the streets of Ulster seem strongly associated.

British history among Catholics is associated with decreases in violence approval. Is this due to an appreciation of British history in particular or to some understanding of a more peaceful polity than Northern Ireland? Particularly in the Primary schools Irish history is associated with increases in disorder acceptance. Catholic boys without history classes, however, are just as likely to approve of violence. This may indicate that historical interests outwith the school have a deeper and more enduring effect upon political attitudes.

In the Catholic Primary and Intermediate schools Irish language is associated with increases in violence in politics. The Gaelic revival and the physical force tradition still seem to be united in the minds of many boys.

In both religions boys in primary four reject violence to a greater extent than their older co-religionists in primary six. Perhaps the upsurge of violence acceptance in Irish politics begins around the age of eight and accelerates quickly thereafter.

In most cases the upper streams in school years are more likely to reject disorder. In Catholic Intermediate schools, however, the lower first year are readiest to reject violence and the boys in unstreamed first year most likely to accept disorder.

# Chapter V: Footnotes

- 1. A.S. Makarenko, quoted in Politics in the U.S.S.R., Frederick C. Barghoorn, (Little, Brown 1966) p.85.
- "Catholic schools make 'Royal' choice", <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, 13th October 1972.
- 3. See Richard Rose, Governing Without Consensus, p.493.
- Edgar Litt, "Civic Education Norms and Political Indoctrination", American Sociological Review, 28, (Feb. 1963), 69-75.
- 5. Kenneth P. Langton and M. Kent Jennings, "Formal Environment: the School", in Langon, Political Socialization, p.84.
- 6. G. Mercer, "The impact of formal political education in adolescent political learning: the case of Modern Studies and political efficacy among Scottish schoolchildren", paper given at Exeter, September 1971.
- 7. Laurence Wylie, <u>Village in the Vancluse</u>, (Harvard University Press, 1964) 206-207.
- 8. "School haven of security-report", <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, 9th November, 1972.
- 9. Langton, Political Socialization, p.118.
- 10. Bernard Crick, "The Introducing of Politics", in <u>The</u> <u>Teaching of Politics</u>, ed. D.B.Heater, (Methuen Educational Limited:1969) p.5.
- 11. Wylie, Vancluse, p.206-207
- 12. Jim McCormick, "Political Games", Fortnight, 12th November 1971.
- 13. <u>General Studies Project</u>, (Schools Council Publishing Company, 1971.)
- 14. E. Holmes and A.M. Thornton, "Children in Distress", The Northern Teacher, Summer, 1972.
- 15. W.H. Burston, "Soviet History Teaching", in <u>History</u>, vol.XXXIX June 1954.
- 16. Mark M. Krug, <u>History and the Social Sciences</u>, (Blaisdell, 1967) p.22.
- 17. Birnie Hodgetts, "Canada", Community Forum, Spring 1971.
- 18. Roy Nash, "History as She is Writ", <u>New Society</u>, 3rd August 1972.

- 19. John Magee, "The Teaching of Irish History in Irish Schools", <u>The Northern Teacher</u>, Winter 1970 p.16.
- 20. ibid., p.16.
- 21. <u>ibid.</u>, p.18.
- 22. "Cork Professor Rebukes O'Brien", Belfast Telegraph, April 6th 1972.
- 23. "Londonderry" Grosseteste College of Education, Community Forum, Spring 1971.
- 24. Barry White, "My View", Belfast Telegraph, 1st July 1971.
- 25. Barrit and Carter, The Northern Ireland Problem, (Ref. Ch.I: fn.6) p.91.
- 26. Magee, op.cit., p.19.
- 27. Two Centuries of Irish History, (BBC Series)
- 28. Schools Council Enquiry into the Attitudes of School Leavers, (1968).
- 29. "Teach the history of Ireland-Professor" Belfast Telegraph, 5th January 1973.
- 30. Richard Rose, Governing Without Consensus, p. 338.
- 31. Joan Maizels, "How School-Leavers Rato Teachers", <u>New Society</u>, 24th September 1970.
- 32. <u>East African Education and Citizenship Project</u>, (East African Institute of Social Research) see Koff and Van der Muhll.
- 33. "Crossmaglen Teacher in IRA", Ulster Gazette, 3rd February 1972.
- 34. Dawson and Prewitt, Political Socialization, op.cit., p.160-61.
- 35. Abramson, P.R., "The Political Socialization of the English Schoolboy". op.cit (ref: ch 1. Fn.10).
- 36. Three girls and the eleven-plus", Report by Carol Clewlow, Belfast Telegraph, 19th May 1972.
- 37. South Down Comprehensive schoolboy.
- 38. "11-plus dead, segregation lives on teacher", <u>Belfast</u> <u>Telegraph</u>, 28th October 1971.
- 39. N.E. Svensson, Ability Grouping and Scholastic Achievement, (Urbana, Stockholm, 1962).
- 40. J.W.B. Douglas, The Home and the School (MacGibbon and Kee: 1964).

- 41. S.K. Harvey and T.G. Harvey "Asolescent Political Outlooks: The Effects of Intelligence as an Independent Variable", Midwest Journal of Political Science, Vol.XIV No.4, November 1970.
- 42. James L. Russell, unpublished report to Northern Ireland Community Relations Commission, "Intelligence Quotient".
- 43. Langton, Political Socialization, chapter five.
- 44. <u>ibid.</u>, chapter five.
- 45. V.O. Key, jnr., <u>Public Opinion and American Democracy</u>, (Knopf: New York, 1961), pp.323-33; Almond and Verba, <u>The Civic Culture</u>, <u>op.cit.</u>, pp.380-81.
- 46. S.M. Lipset, Political Man, (Heinemann: London 1960) p.56.
- 47. Richard Rose, Governing Without Consensus, p.338.
- 48. Ibid., p.339.

(a) Family

The importance of family in child socialization stems from its unique position in the social system. It has a near monopoly of access to children during their formative years before entering school when children experience a prolonged dependence upon parents based on affective relationships. The child identifies with the family, immitates its actions, and accumulates its values. The family carries out explicit socialization through example and teaching. A less direct form occurs within the family as the child's personality develops which will have consequences for social action. By identifying with the family in its social interactions the child learns who he is in relation to the larger society.

Families introduce their children to the polity through the exchange of loyalty and compliance for leadership and decisions beneficial to society and to the family. At the very minimum the family knows that leaders exist and obey their decisions most of the time. Where there is agreement regarding basic political goals loyalty and compliance can be taken for granted. Where loyalty is in short supply attempts must be made to buy it or else achieve compliance through rewards and force. Where splits in the polity exist over such basic matters as the nature and boundaries of the state parents introduce their children to the concepts of loyalty and compliance in conflicting ways. For instance, those fully supporting the existing regime may find it necessary to inculcate ultra-loyalist attitudes in

Ch.Vi - p.2

their children in order to reduce tension within the family and to ensure the continuance of the regime. Those who desire basic changes may find it necessary to pass on rebel attitudes to their children in order to reduce familial tension and to gain the approval of the national and religious community. Such parents may inculcate the minimum of consent to leadership to continue the material welfare of the family whilst relying upon community and religion to supply their emotional needs. This is not to suggest that the children of Republicans will never vote for Ian Paisley but it is unlikely.

When basic political divisions are broadly paralleled in community, economy and religion children are introduced, by the family of origin, to social conflict. The greater the area over which discord extends the greater the number of points there will be in the social system at which disorder can occur. "Flashpoints" exist, not only in the physical geography of Ulster where Catholic and Protestant areas meet, but in the everyday life of the society. Such "flash-points" are also "blind-spots" for a great many people in Ulster. This is the function of holding very firmly to one set of supporting attitudes distinctive to a particular community to the exclusion of those held by another community. Into these intensely dazzling and blinding orientations children in Ulster are socialized by many parents as they experience interchanges with the larger society. The current disorder serves to harden existing differences and another generation of rebels and Ultra-loyalists is produced.

A number of studies have investigated the association

Ch.VI - p.3

between the political attitudes and behaviours of individuals and those of their parents. Hyman, reporting on research findings in Western nations, saw a very clear relationship between parents and their children in political attitudes and behaviours. Such correspondence was particularly strong in American political party identification.<sup>1</sup> According to one study, voters who had parents who did not vote, or who did not make their party preference known, were less likely to develop a party identification of their own than those who could say which party their parents supported at elections.<sup>2</sup> Generally speaking, surveys indicate that children overwhelmingly follow their parents in voting. This is particularly true when both parents were known to vote consistently for the same political party. Butler and Stokes found that British sons and daughters were equally susceptible to the influence of parents' party preferences in their voting habits, but that this influence disappears more quickly when the parents voting patterns were inconsistent with those of the social class of the family.<sup>3</sup> Jennings and Niemi found that the transfer of religious and political values from parents to children was less obvious, and in many cases nonexistent, in the less specific issues than in the more concrete and widely discussed topics.<sup>4</sup> Other studies have concentrated upon the possible influence of family structure upon political attitudes. For instance, children in families without a father tend to be more authoritarian, less interested in politics, and have a lower sense of political efficacy than those in families with both parents present.<sup>5</sup> Relationships have also been traced between the nature of the decision making process within the family and the sense of political competence.<sup>6</sup>

There are two main areas of concern regarding the family and the polity in political socialization. The first is the effectiveness of transfer of political lessons from parents to children. Due to the need for complete secrecy of response in the surveys it was impossible to link up individual attitudes with those of parents. Such an attempt would not only have broken faith with the boys but could have led to unpleasant confrontations with some parents due to the nature of some of the basic questions. The only question related to specific political attitudes within families involved asking the boys about their families' feelings of political competence. The second main issue about family and polity in political socialization is about the generalization of non-political lessons learned within the family to the polity. Such generalization depends, to a great extent, upon the congruence of family and political structures.<sup>7</sup> In a primitive society with a relatively undifferentiated political structure the transfer of attitudes from family to polity is likely due to the similarity of response necessary in both social sub-systems. But in highly differentiated societies with cultural heterogeneity, institutionalized arrangements for decision making, and political rules which differ vastly from family rules, the generalization of family responses to the polity becomes less likely. In Ulster there are a number of forces working for and against such generalization. Whilst there is cultural heterogeneity, special agencies for resolving conflicts, and the penetration of security forces, there are areas which, in times of disorder in particular, are very localised political territories. Within such areas there is generally religious, social class, and national

homogeneity. Also there are extended family contacts, little contact with outsiders, and a high degree of familiarity with local leaders. In times of disorder these localised areas may become the only polity that concerns those engaged in disorder. Hence, generalization from family attitudes to polity becomes likely. For instance, high respect for the authority of parents may easily generalise to respect for local political leaders. On the other hand, respect for the government and family may differ greatly due to the greater number of different experiences reaching the individual from government and family.

Parents have been blamed for much of the disorder in The government, the media and the army have labelled Ulster. lack of parental control as largely contributive to the "troubles". For instance, the Secretary of State, Mr. Whitelaw, saw lack of parental control behind an incident in Armagh in which a soldier was killed after children stoned an army vehicle and the leaderwriter of the Belfast Telegraph wrote, 'It is natural to blame the children. Yet it is the parents who bear the greatest guilt..... Unless all the parents of Northern Ireland assert themselves firmly and quickly this Province is not going to be fit for children.'<sup>9</sup> The children themselves are quick to find fault with their parents. When the 'Youth in Derry' survey asked the question, 'To what extent can parents and adults be held responsible for the trouble in Londonderry?' 26 per cent replies 'very much' and 32 per cent 'quite a lot'.<sup>10</sup> A longterm follow-up Cambridge Study in Delinquent Development of 411 boys confirmed the hypothesis that delinquent boys either failed to learn how to conform to the rules of society, or were

Ch.VI - p.5

taught how not to conform in their home environment.<sup>11</sup> Thus. home socialization experiences are probably partly to blame for youthful involvement in disorder. But many feel that parents can do very little to prevent their children being dragged into violence. One letter-writer to the editor asserts that 'Decent Catholic parents must stand by while their children are sucked into the war-machine and brain-washed into hating, bombing and shooting.<sup>12</sup> And Morris Fraser thinks that it is precisely because parents are anxious and upset about the troubles that some children need psychiatric care: "No child was 'disturbed' in isolation; each problem, on examination proved to be that of a disturbed family."<sup>13</sup> Not only may children have to disobey their parents in order to take part in the current unrest, but anxiety behavioural cues which parents transmit to children may make it all the more likely that children will find a release for their tensions in rioting and stoning. Parents are probably neither wholly to blame nor are they innocent of socializing their children into conflict. An American study, conducted shortly after the assassination of President Kennedy found that the more emotionally involved the parents were the more likely it was that they would explain the assassination to their children.<sup>14</sup> Few parents in Ulster are emotionally uninvolved and few can, or will, completely avoid discussing the disorders before their children. And parents are themselves products of much the same socializing processes as the children. Although many parents have not experienced the intensity of disorder, as children, as is currently present, they lived their youth in a land never far removed from strife and the threat of violence. Parents and children alike are pulled by the same perpetual conflicts which exist in almost

every Ulster man or woman. Try though they may many parents in Northern Ireland find it hard to disengage entirely from some sort of justification of violence in politics. Past grievances are gathered up into present conflicts as parents and children are drawn into the same battlefield in which their fathers and grandfathers fought fifty years ago.

## Father and Prime Minister Characteristics

· . . . . .

Family socialization provides children with their initial value screen through which the wider society is perceived. This has the effect of highlighting some aspects of social life and filtering out others. For instance, if deference to parents is highly valued within the family it may be more easily approved and observed in the polity. According to Greenstein the idealization of political leaders 'may be an extension of, or a reaction to, orientations to the child's parents'. Easton and Dennis found that children's mean ratings of father and various political authorities on a number of qualities like power and benevolence, started high with the younger children, but that the mean ratings for the political authorities fell over the grades whilst the father ratings remained high.<sup>16</sup> In order to test whether or not children in Northern Ireland generalized their views of fathers to political authorities, they were asked to choose, from a list of characteristics provided, which qualities a father and a Prime Minister should possess. The list of qualities presented was - strong, kind, patient, wise, God-fearing, and good - and these were presented two times in clearly separate parts of the questionnaires. The boys were not asked to list the qualities they thought their fathers and Prime Minister actually possessed, but which qualities they thought they should have. This may

Ch.VI - p.8

encompass culturally approved characteristics and allows the boys to choose some of their ideal qualities in both cases. Alternatively, a Prime Minister is not an idealized figure but a real human being with specific qualities including association with political parties and policies. Considerations of his current popularity/unpopularity will doubtless influence the choice of characteristics.

Anyone wishing to build a Prime Minister's image among Ulster's schoolboys would do well to concentrate upon the characteristics of wisdom or intelligence, patience, and, particularly among primary school children, kindness. In the secondary schools wisdom and patience take precedence over the other qualities listed, but wisdom is far ahead among both Protestants and Catholics. Among Protestants 72 per cent chose this quality and 69 per cent of Catholics. In the primary schools wisdom is the most frequent choice among Protestants (68 per cent), whilst kindness is most frequently chosen by the younger Catholic boys. A God-fearing Prime Minister is chosen least frequently among both Protestants and Catholics. A kind and patient father is most frequently desired among secondary school boys whilst in the primary schools the most frequent choices are 'kind' and 'strong'. Again, God-fearing is the most infrequently chosen characteristic for fathers.

In order to investigate whether or not boys generalized from the qualities they thought a father should have to those a Prime Minister should possess the characteristics listed for both Table VI:1 Order of Frequency of Choice of Prime Minister and Father Characteristics

### PROTESTANTS

| SECONDARY* Prime Minister |             | £  | Father      | £  |
|---------------------------|-------------|----|-------------|----|
|                           | wise        | 72 | kind        | 62 |
|                           | patient     | 44 | patient     | 62 |
|                           | strong      | 39 | wise        | 53 |
|                           | good        | 24 | good        | 47 |
|                           | God-fearing | 20 | strong      | 44 |
|                           | kind        | 19 | God-fearing | 25 |
| PRIMARY                   | wise        | 68 | kind        | 64 |
|                           | kind        | 53 | strong      | 59 |
|                           | good        | 48 | wise        | 55 |
|                           | strong      | 38 | good        | 44 |
|                           | patient     | 26 | patient     | 21 |
|                           | God-fearing | 11 | God-fearing | 8  |

### CATHOLICS

| SECONDARY* |             |    |             |    |
|------------|-------------|----|-------------|----|
|            | wise        | 69 | kind        | 67 |
|            | patient     | 49 | patient     | 64 |
|            | good        | 35 | good        | 53 |
| S          | kind        | 32 | wise        | 51 |
|            | strong      | 30 | strong      | 40 |
|            | God-fearing | 20 | God-fearing | 34 |
| PRIMARY    |             |    |             |    |
|            | kind        | 57 | kind        | 61 |
|            | wise        | 55 | strong      | 53 |
|            | good        | 44 | good        | 45 |
|            | patient     | 24 | wise        | 40 |
|            | strong      | 21 | patient     | 17 |
|            | God-fearing | 12 | God-fearing | 12 |

\*For the remainder of this study Intermediate and Grammar schoolboys have been collapsed into one 'Secondary' category. The Secondary Sample has also been weighted to make it more representative of Secondary schoolboys in Northern Ireland. (See Appendix II ) were combined. Remembering the Easton and Dennis<sup>17</sup> finding it might be hypothesized that primary school children will reveal greater correspondence between the father and Prime Minister characteristics than the boys in the secondary schools.

Table VI: 2 Percentage of those who chose a characteristic for Father who also chose the same characteristic for Prime Minister

|             | Protestant<br>१ | Catholic<br>% | Difference<br>% |
|-------------|-----------------|---------------|-----------------|
| PRIMARY     |                 |               |                 |
| Strong      | 51              | 28            | +23             |
| Kind        | 63              | 68            | -5              |
| Patient     | 50              | 44            | +6              |
| Wise        | 86              | 76            | +10             |
| God-fearing | 60              | 37            | +23             |
| Good        | 66              | 59            | +7              |
|             |                 |               |                 |
| SECONDARY   |                 |               |                 |
| Strong      | 58              | 46            | +12             |
| Kind        | 26              | 40            | -14             |
| Patient     | 56              | 62            | -6              |
| Wise        | 86              | 85            | +1              |
| God-fearing | 54              | 46            | +8              |
| Good        | 42              | 48            | <del>-</del> 6  |

Whilst the Secondary school boys are less likely to generalise from father to prime minister qualities than the Primary pupils the difference overall is not striking (see Table VI: 2). Only on the characteristic of 'kindness' are the differences between the older and younger boys obvious where younger boys are more likely to choose a kind father and prime minister combined. The quality most frequently combined for father and prime minister is, as expected, wisdom. Among Protestants 86 per cent of both Primary and Secondary schoolboys who chose this characteristic for father also chose it for prime minister.

Two major points that emerge are the degree of generalization from family to polity and the order of choice of ideal types of father and political leader. In Ulster the most generalizable characteristic is wisdom followed by kindness and goodness among Primary schoolboys. This suggests that in the Primary schools politics may be taught in familial terms to a much greater extent than in the Secondary schools. Emphasising the qualities of wisdom, kindness and goodness will provide linkage points between family and polity for younger children and thus help lay the foundations of political legitimacy. In the Secondary schools, endeavouring to teach the politics of 'national family' may not prove so productive of good feelings towards the political system since older boys link up the polity and family much less frequently. However, stressing the use of wisdom within family decision making processes and within the state may underline already existing sympathies and create political allegiance to the government of the day. The other point of note concerns the order of choice of characteristics for prime minister and father. In every case wisdom is preferred to strength in a prime minister by approximately 30 per cent. This may emphasize the underlying desire for peaceful politics in most children and young people. In the case of father, strength is put before wisdom among primary school Protestants and Catholics, but even here it should be noted that kindness leads over strength in every group. Neither in terms of generalization from family to

polity, nor in the order of choice of characteristics, does strength take precedence over the pacific qualities. But when 'wise' men and 'kind' fathers disagree over basic political issues 'strength' may win the day.

#### Respect for Parents and Government

Another way of testing whether or not there is any generalization of attitudes from the family to the polity is to compare the levels of respect directed towards these separate groups. One head-master in Northern Ireland maintained that loss of respect towards any authority figure, or group, would result in an all-round loss of respect for authority. Alternatively, one may say that only because certain authority figures, like parents, themselves show little respect towards government are they able to keep the respect of their children who may belong to a Junior Branch of the I.R.A.

To test whether there is any possible link between respect for authority within the family and polity the boys were asked how important they felt it was that obedience should be given to parents and to the government of Northern Ireland. One might hypothesize that there will be a closer correspondence between levels of respect to parents and to government among Protestants than among Catholics who will render lower respect to government. If this is the case, then generalization of respect from family to polity among Protestants depends, not upon all-round respect level to any authority, but upon an identification of interests between family and government. Catholics on the other hand, may be less likely to find that the vital interests of their families are shared by the government.

Protestants are twice as likely as Catholics to say that it is very important to do whatever government commands. Secondary school Catholics are twice as likely as Secondary school Protestants to say that it is not very, or not at all important, to do whatever government says, and among Primary schoolboys, Catholics are three to four times more likely than Protestants to take this view. The respect a Protestant boy gives to his family and government bears closer correspondence (D.I. = 15%) than that between these authority groups for Catholics (D.I. = 45%). If there had not been such a wide difference of respect levels to family and polity among Catholic boys one could have assumed that respect does generalise from one authority to another without an identity of interests being apparent to the boys. But because Catholic boys of the same age as Protestants clearly distinguish between government and parents in the respect they render to each it is more likely that all the boys respond to government out of a sense of identity of interests or the lack of it. Thus, even the youngest boys in the sample (seven and eight years of age) are probably aware when the two authority groups share a community of interests, and when this is not so obvious, and respond accordingly. Alternatively, whilst there may be a relationship between respect for parents and government the aggregate impact is not great enough to tip the scales for Catholic boys (Table VI: 3).

| Table VI: 3 a)                                   | Importance        | e of doing | whatever  | parents say               |      |
|--|-------------------|------------|-----------|---------------------------|------|
|  | Very<br>important | -          | -         | not at all<br>t important | N.A. |
| SECONDARY  |                   |            |           |                           |      |
| Protestants %                                    | 62                | 33         | 2         | 1                         | 2    |
| Catholics %                                      | 66                | 29         | 2         | 2                         | 1    |
| PRIMARY  |                   |            |           |                           |      |
| Protestants %                                    | 81                | 14         | 1         | 3                         | 1    |
| Catholics %                                      | 73                | 19         | 3         | 3                         | 2    |
| b  | ) Importanc       | ce of doin | g whateve | r government              | says |
| SECONDARY  |                   |            |           |                           |      |
| Protestants %                                    | 48                | 32         | 10        | 9                         | 1    |
| Catholics %                                      | 25                | 36         | 20        | 18                        | l    |
| PRIMARY  |                   |            |           |                           |      |
| Protestants %                                    | 66                | 20         | 5         | 8                         | 1    |
| Catholics %                                      | 28                | 22         | 13        | 32                        | 5    |
| Difference Indexes between Family and Government |                   |            |           |                           |      |
|  |                   | Protesta   | nt Ca     | tholic                    |      |
| Primar   | У                 | 15%        |           | 45%                       |      |

A very small minority of boys in the sample revealed low respect for teachers, but they were much more negative to government and ready to approve political disorder than boys with higher regard for teachers. Thus, there may be a similar feature to be observed among the minority of boys who give little or no respect to parents. Such boys are found mainly in the Secondary schools. It might be hypothesized therefore that boys revealing low respect for parents will also be more

16%

45%

Secondary

negatively oriented to government and violent in political outlook than boys in higher family respect levels.

In fact, there is a fairly general rise in negative feelings towards government from those with high respect to those with low respect for parents. For example, 60 per cent of Catholic Primary boys saying it was 'not at all' important to do what parents said were negatively oriented to government compared to only 28 per cent of boys who found it very important to obey parents. This finding is repeated with minor variations among all boys. (see Table VI: 4). Endorsement of violence in politics increases, in three of the four groups considered, as respect for parents decreases. Although Protestant respect for parents may generalize to government, disrespect for parents, no matter what one's religion, is associated with negative affect for government and disorder approval.

Importance of doing whatever a parent says....Very Fairly Not very Not at all important important important important £ 8 8 8 PRIMARY PROTESTANT POSITIVE 67 52 40 59 29 positive 39 60 18 negative 1 5 23 -1 1 NEGATIVE -----No answer 2 3 \_ \_ PRIMARY CATHOLIC POSITIVE 35 25 56 30 positive 36 39 6 7 negative 18 16 19 13 NEGATIVE 10 16 19 47 no answer 1 4 3 ---SECONDARY PROTESTANT POSITIVE 38 24 31 7 positive 48 60 42 58 negative 11 13 22 7 2 NEGATIVE 3 5 28 no answer -1 \_ -SECONDARY CATHOLIC POSITIVE 20 11 16 9 positive 47 50 27 22 24 negative 24 30 24 7 26 NEGATIVE 12 39 no answer 2 3 1 6

τι, μ. τ. τ. τ. τ. τ. γ τ. τ. τ. τ. τ. τ. τ. γ

•, . • .

### Dominance within the family

One aspect of family structure and family relationships which may be related to political socialization is the dominance of either mother or father within the family. The 'status envy' theory of socialization posits that the child's envy of persons who control resources which he himself would like to control leads him to identify with the controller and to imitate his or her behaviour. Thus, where the mother controls the resources valued by the child, such as pocketmoney and time-allocation, the child may identify more with the mother than father. Hess and Torney found that in mother dominated families the boys were lower in political interest and efficacy, participation in political discussion and activities, than where fathers were dominant.<sup>18</sup> Children who saw their father as dominant tended to be more informed and interested in political matters. Langton's findings from a survey of elementary American school children confirmed that boys in mother dominated families had a lower sense of political efficacy and were less interested in politics than those in father dominated families.<sup>19</sup> Barold Jackson in <u>The Two Irelands</u> writes of the constant need some men in Ulster have of asserting their masculinity:

> Often this takes the form of excessive drinking and gambling. Pilot studies of the effects of long-time unemployment have suggested that it even saps virility in the strictly physical sense and this too, may well have set up considerable stresses. The result of it all has been a growing incidence of vandalism and blind destruction of public property - walls defaced, telephone kiosks destroyed - and a growing inclination to combat authority in the most flagrant way possible. This was one way to show that masculinity was still potent. Allied to the political grievances already simmering away it is evident why the riots that eventually broke out took the form they did. 20

Ch.VI - p.18

In Northern Ireland it might by hypothesized that where mothers are dominant within the family, boys would be less politically concerned than where 'father was boss'. Thus, such boys should give fewer answers to political questions. Also, since extreme political attitudes probably go with higher involvement in politics we might expect boys in mother dominated families to be more moderate in affect for government and probably less likely to approve of fighting for political ends. Boys in father dominated families, as opposed to those where both parents were equal, or mother was dominant, may be expected to be either more highly positive or negative to government, and more in agreement with violence. Alternatively, bearing in mind the extent to which women in Ulster have been drawn into the current disorder perhaps one should not expect to find wide differences between boys with different domination systems within their families.

In order to test these hypotheses the children were asked about the 'boss in your family'. The majority of Primary schoolboys thought of father as the dominant figure in their family (57 per cent Protestants: 48 per cent Catholics). Approximately one quarter replied that there was an equality of influence and only a small minority felt that mother was in control (eight per cent Protestants: 15 per cent Catholics). Among Secondary schoolboys approximately one third felt that father was 'boss' and 40 per cent that both were equal. Only nine per cent replied that mother was dominant.

Boys in mother dominated families are no less ready to answer political questions that others. There are few differences in affect to government between boys in mother or father dominated families. In only one case out of four is there any difference in attitudes to discord between boys in mother and father dominated families where the difference is the opposite to that hypothesized. In the Protestant Primary schools 61 per cent in mother dominated families approved violence to only 50 per cent in father dominated families.

Family dominance patterns in Northern Ireland seem unrelated to political attitudes. This could suggest that the whole adult population - male and female - are equally involved/ uninvolved in political conflict. Equally, it could suggest that schoolboys are uninfluenced by their parents in their political views.

# Influence within the Family

Sharing in family decisions has been seen as having some influence upon civic outlooks. For instance, Almond and Verba found that adults who remember consistently being able to express themselves in family decisions tended to score highest in feelings of political competence.<sup>21</sup> And being allowed to take part in family decisions probably also indicates that parents are not authoritarian in their control of young people. Maccoby, Mathews and Morton found that rebellion against parents was least likely to take place among youths who reported that parents had 'about average amount of say' regarding their activities.<sup>22</sup> If taking part in family decisions both increases feelings of how one could handle a political problem and reduces the likelihood of rebellion against parents we might expect to find Ulster boys with 'some say' in family decisions less extreme and more peaceful in political outlooks. Those with no say in family decisions may be both more extreme and violent in political outlooks due to lack of training in compromises and feelings of rebellion against authoritarian parents.

To test the effect of taking part in family decisions the boys were split into two groups: those who said they had "some say" in family decisions and those who reported having "no say". Approximately 55 per cent of the Primary schoolboys reported having some say in family decisions and approximately 35 per cent "nn say". A relatively high percentage of Primary boys (11 per cent) did not answer this question indicating some degree of uncertainty. Approximately 80 per cent of Secondary schoolboys said they had some influence when the family was deciding to do something together.

Virtually no differences appear between boys with 'some' or 'no' say in family decisions regarding affect to government and attitudes to political discord. One minor exception to this general rule is found among secondary school Protestants where boys with 'no say' in family decisions are ten per cent more negative to government than others in their group. In Northern Ireland at least, participation in the family decision making process has little or no influence upon basic political attitudes.

## People like my family and Covernment

This section on family and polity has been taken up almost entirely with family structures, and relationships, and the possible effects these might have for political attitudes. Here we investigate specific political attitudes within the family. Studies of political efficacy have generally concentrated upon what causes it in <u>individuals</u>. Here we look at how the boys see the levels of political efficacy among <u>families like their own</u> and what possible effects this may have for affect and disorder. It might be hypothesized that a child reared in an atmosphere of high political efficacy may not only be more positive to government, but also less likely to resort to violence in politics. Reciprocally, a boy whose family feels they can seldom, or never, influence the government may display a high degree of hostility and violence in political views.

To that for this the boys were asked if people like their family could usually, sometimes, seldom, or never, get the government to do what they wanted. Approximately half of the Catholic boys of all ages felt that people like their family could 'never' get government to do what they wanted. Surprisingly, 43 per cent of Primary school Protestants felt this way too, and 60 per cent of Secondary school Protostants replied that people like their family could 'seldom' or 'never' influence the government in their direction. On balance, Protestant boys recorded higher political efficacy among people like them than Catholics (D.I.'s: Primary = 14%; Secondary = 23%) but overall the feeling that government could be influenced was not great.

Ch.VI = p.22

Although Catholic positive affect to government is lower than that found among Protestants, higher feelings of political efficacy among people like oneself does appear associated with positive affect to government in both religions. This is most obvious in the very positive position (government always wants to help people like me). Among Protestants 72 per cent of secondary and 62 per cent of primary schoolboys who record that their family can usually influence government are also very positive to government. Among Catholics, approximately 45 per cent recording the highest efficacy position to their family are extremely positive to government. Thus, as one would expect, giving people confidence in themselves to influence their political environment is associated with increases in their positive affect towards that environment. Unfortunately such boys are in a minority in both religions. In three cases out of four low political efficacy associated with family goes with greater negative feelings towards government. (See table VI:5) Only in the Catholic secondary schools is there a clear progresssion in violence approval from high to low political efficacy categories. This rise is from 45 per cent approving disorder, among those feeling highly efficacious to 69 per cent of those who say that government will never do what people like them want.

\*

| Table VI: 5 Perception of family's political influence and<br>Affect to Government |               |            |        |       |                                     |
|--|---------------|------------|--------|-------|-------------------------------------|
| People like<br>family can  | TY<br>Usually | Sometimes  | Seldom | Never | get the<br>government<br>to do what |
|  | \$            | \$         | \$     | 4     | they want                           |
|  |               | Protestant | .9     |       |                                     |
| Primary  |               |            |        |       |                                     |
| POSITIVE   | 72            | 63         | 58     | 64    |                                     |
| positive   | 23            | 32         | 41     | 29    |                                     |
| negative   | 2             | 1          | 1      | 4     |                                     |
| NECETIVE   | 1             | ο          | ο      | 2     |                                     |
| no answer  | 2             | 4          | -      | 1     |                                     |
| Secondary  |               |            |        |       |                                     |
| POSITIVE   | 62            | 37         | 26     | 27    |                                     |
| positive   | 24            | 56         | 61     | 42    |                                     |
| negative   | 8             | 5          | 10     | 23    |                                     |
| NEGATIVE   | 5             | 2          | 3      | 7     |                                     |
| no answer  | -             | -          | -      | 1     |                                     |
|  |               | Catholics  |        |       |                                     |
| Primary  |               |            |        |       |                                     |
| Positive   | 48            | 38         | 28     | 29    |                                     |
| positive   | 30            | 27         | 41     | 36    |                                     |
| negative   | 6             | 13         | 21     | 20    |                                     |
| NEGATIVE   | 9             | 10         | 8      | 15    |                                     |
| no answer  | 7             | 12         | 2      | -     | ,                                   |
| Secondary  |               |            |        |       |                                     |
| Positive   | 43            | 20         | 16     | 14    |                                     |
| positive   | 21            | 51         | 57     | 40    |                                     |
| negative   | 18            | 21         | 19     | 30    |                                     |
| NEGATIVE   | 18            | 3          | 6      | 13    |                                     |

5

-

no answer

2 3

Summary

Boys are most likely to link up their ideals of families and politics in terms of 'wisdom'. That this should be the most generalizable quality among pupils in both primary and secondary schools is some indication that, although the children and young people have been subjected to, and sometimes taken part in, civil disorders, their basic desires are that wise counsels should prevail in Ulster. This is further strengthened by the fact that, in the order of precedence given to prime minister and father, qualities, the peaceful attributes come before strength. That a 'God-fearing' father or prime minister comes so low in their order of choice indicates that the specifically religious element within family and polity is not highly valued. Thus, although the majority of boys approve violence in politics, they may be basically peaceful in desiring a wise, secular, leadership. This may be too facile an interpretation. Wisdom, in the minds of many boys, may not be a peaceful characteristic. Many boys who desired wise fathers and prime ministers also endorsed disorder. Also, many of them, especially Protestants, when asked what they would do if they were prime minister, insisted on taking a very strong 'law and order' position. Thus it may be thought wise to 'bash a Republican' because that is the only sort of language he understands, or deserves, or to try to bomb the Orangemen into submission because otherwise they will not give 'an inch'. In a land where past disorders are relevant in present disputes there comes a time when many people declare that the only 'sensible' thing to do is fight. When wise men disagree and seek mutually exclusive goals then the content of their choice, rather than their virtue, is of importance.

Catholics and Protestants differ so much in their levels of respect to government that little may be made of the generalization thesis which holds that high respect for any authority will spill over to respect for other authorities. Whilst both Protestants and Catholics show high respect for parents the Catholics obviously see the family and the government in very different lights. Yet among the small minority of beys who are disrespectful to parents (approximately five per cent) there is a definite increase in both negative affect for government and disorder approval. Thus the 'all-round respect' thesis may be correct if we look only at the disrespectful boys. Here one would expect that boys who feel it 'not very' important to obey parents would be the most likely to get out of their home environment and roam the streets. Also it seems likely that they may provide reasons for civil disobedience to other more respectful boys. That they are such a small minority may make them more easily identifiable to docial workers and law enforcement officers (if any can contact their families), but they may have an importance greater than their number suggests in inciting other boys to take part in disorders. Further research could profitably examine whether such boys are more likely than others to be the leaders of peer groups, more ready to riot, and engage in social vandalism. That the 'disrespectful' boys are more likely to approve disorder than others is some slight indication that parents are partially successful in restraining youthful violence. In other words, those who will listen to their parents are a little more peaceful. Alternatively, because parents may advocate restraint, boys may become more disrespectful of them finding their views totally unrealistic in a situation which may require them to become junior

members of organizations committed to forwarding political aims through physical force.

Whether father or mother is the dominant figure in family life or whether or not boys feel they can influence family decisions has little relevance for political attitudes. This may indicate, on one hand, that women are as violent in outlook as men when it comes to political goals, and on the other, that most boys find few points of resemblance between what they can achieve within the family and political life in Ulster. But how boys think about the potential influence of people like their families does appear to influence their political viewpoint. Thus the policy of giving people confidence in their abilities to influence their political environment may increase positive affect to government and lower propensities to violence. But if the ability to influence government is confined to people like their own families (same social class and religion) the increased influence of one group may be seen as decreasing the power of another. Only if all types of children can conceive, together, of increased influence over the political environment can an all-round, voluntary, decrease in violent outlook and negative feelings be anticipated.

Using a method similar to that described in the summary of chapter four reveals very few family influences which may be associated with either affect to government or discord. This is because, although large differences do exist between many characteristics described in this chapter, the majority of them involve less than ten per cent of a particular school type. The

following table shows the characteristics in this chapter which (1) involve more than ten per cent of boys within a school type and (2) which are associated with differences from the distribution for affect or discord attitudes of ten per cent or more. A (+) indicates an increase in positive affect and an increase in disorder acceptance and a (-) the reverse.

| CHARACTERISTIC  |  |
|---|--|
| and the second |  |

-----

----

|                  | Protestants |           | Catho   | lics      |
|------------------|-------------|-----------|---------|-----------|
|                  | Primary     | Secondary | Primary | Secondary |
| (1) Affect       | •           | •         | t       | •         |
| Fairly important |             |           |         |           |
| to obey parents  | 12-         |           |         |           |
| Family political |             |           |         |           |
| efficacy         |             |           | ,       |           |
| High             |             |           | 18+     |           |
| medium low       |             |           |         | 12-       |
|                  |             |           |         |           |
| very low         |             | 15-       |         |           |

(2) Discord

Fairly important to obey parents 17-

## (b) Social Class

In the interchanges between the family and the economy of labour and assets for wages and consumer goods families develop and convey economic life-styles. The family does much more than simply shape the consumer behaviour of children; it also teaches them to anticipate certain economic roles by directing their attention towards types of occupation thought appropriate for them and neglecting others because they are thought inappropriate or
Ch.VI = p.28

unobtainable. Even though a child has no explicit class consciousness, his parents social class will directly or indirectly affect his attitudes and opportunities to have a wide range of experiences near and away from his home.

In order to test the possible effects of social class upon basic political attitudes the boys were asked to write out either the name of their father's occupation or, failing this, to give a brief description of his present job or (where unemployed) last employment. Later in the questionnaire they were offered a choice of basic socio-economic groups and asked to indicate to which their father belonged. Skilled and unskilled manual workers have been coded as 'working-class' and all others (including routine white collar workers) as 'middle class'. Where boys gave no answer to the earlier question regarding father's occupation or, where the response was unreadable, their later choice of occupational category was used when assigning them to a particular social class.

ŧ

| Question   | 40.   | 40. Put a tick in the box beside the one that concluses to telling what your father does, or MARK ONE BOX ONLY |                    |                          |           |             |                       |          |       |       |
|--|---|--|--------------------|--------------------------|-----------|-------------|-----------------------|----------|-------|-------|
|  | He works in a labouring job. He uses his hands<br>and arms and body a lot. The job does not take<br>long to learn   |  |                    |                          |           |             |                       |          |       |       |
|  | He works with his hands in a job that takes a<br>long time to learn.like a carpenter, an<br>electrician, a plumber, a machinist or something<br>like that |  |                    |                          |           |             |                       |          |       |       |
| He works in an office or a shop or something else<br>like that and usually wears a uniform or shirt and<br>tie to work |   |  |                    |                          |           |             |                       | 3/       |       |       |
|  | He  | work   | <b>s in an o</b> : | ffice as a               | n manager | • • • • • • |                       | 4/       |       |       |
|  |   |  | •                  | yer, docto<br>cial train |           |             |                       | 5/       |       |       |
|  | He  | owns   | a busine           | ss, factor               | y or sho  | P••••       |                       | 6/       |       |       |
|  |   |  |                    | a farm an                |           |             |                       | 7/       |       |       |
|  |   |  |                    | a small f                |           |             |                       | 8/       |       |       |
| Table VI:  | <u>6</u>  | Soci   |                    | c group an<br>CLASS      |           |             |                       |          | Farme | r     |
|  |   | N.A.   |                    | Manual  <br>d Skilled    |           |             | - Profess-<br>L ional | Business | Large | Small |
| PRIMARY  |   |  |                    |                          |           |             |                       |          |       |       |
| Protestan  | t s   | 2  | 23                 | 35                       | 18        | 6           | 8                     | 4        | 2     | 2     |
| Catholic S   | ł   | 5  | 23                 | 31                       | 15        | 7           | 7                     | 7        | 2     | 3     |
| SECONDARY  |   |  |                    |                          |           |             |                       |          | Farme | r     |
| Protestan  | t 🐐   | 1  | 17                 | 26                       | 19        | 8           | <b>B</b> '            | 6        | ¥2    |       |
| Catholic   | •   | 4  | 25                 | 28                       | 13        | 4           | 6                     | 8        | 12    |       |

Earlier child socialization studies have suggested that where samples have included children from less favourable economic backgrounds attitudes to government have been less positive.<sup>23</sup> Because middle class children gave been found to have more favourable attitudes to government we might also expect them to be more opposed to the use of violence for political change. On the other hand, although the Loyalty Survey found the degree of class awareness relatively high by Anglo-American standards such perceptions of class differences were not generalized to regime politics.

> ..... The difference between middle-class and workingclass Protestants in support for the Constitution is four per cent and three per cent in endorsement of an Ultra position. Similarly, among Catholics, there is only a two per cent difference across classes in support for the Constitution, and a five per cent difference in readiness to demonstrate against the The differences between religions is much regime. larger. Within the middle-class, Protestants and Catholics differ by 36 percentage points in their readiness to support the Constitution, and manual workers differ by 30 percentage points. In refusal to comply with basic political laws, about half of each class group is ready to endorse extraconstitutional actions against others who share class but not regime outlooks. It is particularly noteworthy that there is no consistent tendency for middle-class Ulster people to be readiest to endorse the Constitution and refrain from extra-constitutional politics, notwithstanding their relative advantage in terms of status. 24

It might be hypothesized that differences within religions between social classes regarding affect to government will be smaller than those between religions. Also that differences between religions in the same social class will be greater than differences between social classes in the <u>same</u> religion as far as feelings for government are concerned. One might also expect those who belong to the working class to be more extreme in affect to government, either negatively or positively, and readiest to endorse disorder in politics.

The difference indexes between religions regarding

affect to government are 31 per cent in the Primary schools and 22 per cent in the Secondary schools. Within religions social class differences are only in the region of ten per cent. Within the middle class, Protestants and Catholics differ by 32 per cent in Primary schools and 25 per cent in the Secondary. And within the working class, religions differ by 37 per cent in Primary, and 17 per cent in Secondary schools. Thus religion is more important than eocial class in predicting attitudes to the government of Northern Ireland before direct rule was announced. The relatively low difference index of 17 per cent between working class Protestants and Catholics in the Secondary schools is mainly caused by working class boys in both religions bunching into the moderately positive category (government sometimes wants to help people like me: 54 per cent Protestants; 47 per cent Catholics). The lowering of positive affect to government among Protestant working class boys in 1971 may have been caused by the efforts made by Ian Paisley's Democratic Unionist Party to woo Unionists from the traditional Unionist Party. (Table VI: 7)

Working-class boys do not differ greatly in their views of government, from middle class boys, but they are slightly more violent in political outlook in three cases out of four. In one case, the Protestant Secondary schools, the difference between social classes is 19 per cont where 78 per cent of working-class boys favoured violent political solutions. (Table VI: 8)

. ,

ì

5 8 8

10- 2

|           | PROTESTA         | nts                  | CATHOLIC         | S               |
|-----------|------------------|----------------------|------------------|-----------------|
|           | Working<br>Class | Middle<br>Class<br>% | Working<br>Class | Middle<br>Class |
| Primary   |                  |                      |                  |                 |
| POSITIVE  | 68               | 60                   | 31               | 38              |
| positive  | 28               | 35                   | 34               | 36              |
| negative  | 3                | 2                    | 19               | 15              |
| NEGATIVE  | 1                | 1                    | 15               | 8               |
| no answer | ο                | 2 D.I.= 9%           | 1                | 3 D.I.= 11%     |
| Secondary |                  |                      |                  |                 |
| POSITIVE  | 27               | 37                   | 17               | 18              |
| positive  | 54               | 50                   | 47               | 45              |
| negative  | 13               | 10                   | 21               | 28              |
| NEGATIVE  | 5                | 2                    | 12               | 7               |
| no answer | 1                | 1 D.E.= 10%          | 3                | 2 D.I 8%        |

Table VI: 7 Social Class and Affect to Government

# D.I.s between religions within social classes

|           | Working Class | Middle Class |
|-----------|---------------|--------------|
| Primary   | 378           | 32%          |
| Secondary | 178           | 25%          |

PROTESTANT CATHOLICS Working Middle Working Middle Class Class Class Class . Primary 62 60 Violent 53 47 Peaceful 45 51 37 38 2 D.I.= 2% 2 D.I.= 6% 1 No answer 2 Secondary 65 56 78 60 Violent Peaceful 18 37 34 40 4 D.I. = 9% 3 D.I.= 19% 1 4 No answer

Within the social classes socio-economic groupings make little or no difference to how a schoolboy feels about government. In most cases the sons of professional people are least likely to endorse disorder, but in the weeks after 'Bloody Sunday' the sons of professional Catholics may have joined the ranks of the more violent. For instance, on the morning after 'Bloody Sunday' the ten year son of a Catholic professional person wrote, "I would give the Catholics a better say in the country, release all men interned, and send away all the paratroopers who murdered 13 people in Derry on 30th January."

Although thore are some indications that having a greater stake in the social system is associated with more peaceful political attitudes there are other signs that such attitudes may quickly change under the influence of adverse

# Table VI: 8 Social Class and Discord

current events. Whenever one of the 'bogeymen' of the Catholic community (e.g. British soldiers) goes into action against Catholics the level of violence approval for a United Ireland may rise quickly even among those whom one would expect to be most pacific.

# Career Aspiration

As work is a central feature of life for most people so career prospects are probably a central interest for many boys, especially those attending Secondary schools. Since the type of work anticipated by boys will have a great influence upon their adult life-style we might expect carear aspirations to have some influence upon youthful political outlooks. On the other hand, research has shown that there is a 'tendency for those who make unrealistic career patterns to hold unfavourable attitudes towards the Nation, the Administration, and the System of Laws'.<sup>26</sup> If this is so, then working class boys making middle class career choices may be more negative to government and violent in opposition thus producing few differences between boys with different types of career aspirations.

To test the possible effects of career aspirations upon political attitudes the boys in the Secondary schools were asked to write the name of the career, or job, they wished to follow when they left school, college or university. These answers were later coded as working or middle class career aspirations. Fifty-eight per cent of Protestant boys and 50 per cent of Catholics had career aspirations which could be coded as middle class. Among Protestants career aspirations may be expressed politically to a greater extent than among Catholics. The Protestant boys holding a middle class career aspiration were both more positive to government (D.I. = 15%) and less likely to accept violence (D.I. = 17%) than Protestant boys with working class ambitions. Among Catholics differences were smaller. Boys with working class ambitions were slightly more negative to government (D.I. = 12%) and more prone to approve violence in politics (D.I. = 8%).

#### Summary

Religion is a much better guide to how a boy will feel about government than social class. But religious differences within social classes is a better predictor of affect than is religion on its own. In three cases out of four the difference indexes between religions within social classes are greater than those between religions alone:-

#### Affect for Government

Differences between Differences between religions religions within social classes.

|           |     | Working Class | Middle class |
|-----------|-----|---------------|--------------|
| Primary   | 31% | 37*           | 325          |
| Secondary | 213 | 17*           | 25           |

The only noteworthy difference between boys of different social classes is in the Protestant Secondary schools where the working class boys were much more committed to physical force in politics (D.I. = 19%). Generally speaking, social class <u>alone</u> is a weak predictor of political attitudes.

Within the middle class the sons of professional people are most pacific in political attitudes, but this pattern may be upset by the perception of threat towards one's community. The boys with middle class career aspirations are more peaceful than those anticipating working class jobs. Thus something may be said in favour of teachers and career advisors who place middle class careers before schoolboys. Since it is obvious that many working class boys hope to be upwardly socially mobile one can only hope that the economy can accommodate thom.

#### Chapter VI ; FOOINOTES

- 1. Hyman, H.H. Political Socialization, (New York: The Free Prass, 1959), p.74
- 2. Angus Campbell, Gerald Gurin, and Warren E. Miller, <u>The</u> Votar Decides, (New York: Harper and Row, 1954), p.99
- 3. David Butler and Donald Stokes, <u>Political Change in Britain</u>, (Macmillan: 1969), chapter 3.
- 4. M.K. Jennings and R.G. Niemi, "The Transmission of Political Values from Parent to Child, <u>American Political Science</u> <u>Review</u>, 62, pp.169-184, 1968.
- 5. Langton, Political Socialization, op.cit., Chapter 2
- 6. Almond and Verba, Civic Culture, op.cit., pp.284-87
- 7. Robert A LeVine, "Role of the Family in Authoritarian Systems", Behavioural Science No.5. 1960
- 8. "Armagh death: parents are blamed," <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, 8th August 1972
- 9. Viewpoint: "The Lost Ceneration", Belfast Telegraph' 8th August 1972
- 10. Youth in Derry a Survey Report, (The New University of Ulster: Adult Education, 1971)
- 11. <u>New Society</u>, 14th September 1972, "Delinquency begins at home", David Farrington
- 12. "Parents stand helpless as children are sucked into the IRA war machine," Belfast Telegraph, 16th March 1972
- 13. M. Fraser, <u>Children in Conflict</u>, (Secker and Warburg: London, 1973), p.75.
- 14. P. Peterson and K. Orren, "Presidential Assassination: A Case Study in the Dynamics of Political Socialization", Journal of Politics, 2 pp. 388-404
- 15. Fred I. Greenstein, Political Socialization, op.cit.p.161
- 16. Easton and Dennis, <u>Children in the Political System</u>, <u>op.cit.</u> Ch.12
- 17. <u>ibid</u>
- 18. Hess and Torney, The Development of Political Attitudes in Children, op.cit., p.120
- 19. Langton, Political Socialization, op.cit., p.51.
- 20. Harold Jackson, The Two Irelands: A Dual Study of Inter-Group Tensions, Minority Rights Group Report No.2, 1970

~ \*

- 21. Almond and Verba, Civic Culture, op.cit., p.284.
- 22. Eleanor E. Maccoby et al, "Youth and Political Change", Public Opinion Quarterly, XVIII (1954) pp.23-39.
- 23. Malevolent Leader (ref: Chapter I, fn.5 )
- 24. Governing Without Consensus, Richard Rose, p.281
- 25. Term used by Morris Fraser (Ref: Chapter I; fn.21) when referring to cultural anti-heroes.
- 26. R. Jackson, "Occupational Expectations and Political Attitudes - a Cross Cultural Survey". Paper given at Exeter, September 1971

# (A) National Community

i V

The family introduces the child to the diffuse affective relationships of the community through participation in community activities and in adhering to and making community patterns. In return, the community gives the family a certain standing, supports it, encourages its continuance, and gives it an identity. In a society where community and polity are identical the question of identity may not be a serious community concern. But in a society with a variety of communities giving separate identities there may be considerable strain in preserving an identity consistent with living in different communities. When the communities within society are so clearly separate in group patterns that one must adhere to one or the other, they approach the point of separation at the political level. When it is clear that the separate communities desire distinctive political counterparts community identity becomes a national identity. In a seriously fractured society like Ulster children learn their national identity, not from the legal state, but through interchanges with their national community. Thus families introduce children to the community and nation to which they belong. This is not to suggest that such children cannot switch allegiance in later life, but predispositions are created in childhood regarding community which, in a seriously fractured society, are very difficult to entirely renounce.

American research in the development of patriotism

Ch.VII - p.2

suggests that the schools <u>reinforce</u> the early attachment of the child to the Nation.<sup>1</sup> Earlier identification with a national community may be seen as an extension of identity with the family. This is clearly believed by many national leaders who use familial terms such as 'homeland', 'fatherland' and 'birthright', when attempting to raise national feelings. Research also indicates that children probably learn their first political lessons about the most stable and enduring political characteristics<sup>2</sup> which must be, in many cases, national consciousness.

Children of six and seven years of age develop very positive feelings about their nation, but early development of the national concept does not appear to be attached to any identifiable national object such as a national figure, flag, For instance, a child may be able to say "I am or map. Irish" without being able to give a reason for the identity. Four stages in the way attachment to the nation develops have been suggested: first, children have a positive 'we' concept about their nation which is present before any tangible national object can be discovered in their thought habits; second, national symbols, such as flags, become crucial points of focus for attachment; then the national concept begins to have cognitive substance when children begin to think of their nation as being better than others in terms of 'democracy' and 'freedom'; and finally, older children begin to see their nation as part of a system of nations like the United Nations.<sup>3</sup>

Although Northern Ireland is part of the United Kingdom it had distinct community characteristics which mark it off from

Britain and divides its inhabitants. Both the United Kingdom Eire claim the right to rule Northern Ireland and and children can expect to automatically qualify as citizens of both. This does not mean, however, that they have a choice of national identity. In the vast majority of cases they will accept, without question, the nationality of their parents and probably retain it throughout their entire lives. Children in Ulster reveal little hesitancy when asked about their nationality. Responses such as 'British', 'Irish' and 'Ulster' spring easily to their lips illustrating the importance they attach to such identities. A small minority choose the double identity of British and Irish. This may be because their parents are able to keep pp a fairly constant connection with Britain, or because of a mixed marriage, or because they are combining a legal and emotional answer to the question.

Rather than formally define Irish Nationalism, Owen Dudley Edwards<sup>4</sup> presented a series of affective historical pictures all containing something thought by Irishmen to be distinctively Irish. And this is probably how children are attached to their particular nation: through a series of highly charged emotional images which are implanted in the child's mind early in life and frequently called into service by repetition until they cannot remember a time when they did not possess such affective images. That such pictures have the power of arresting rational thought increases their value as national diets. For instance, long before Bernadette Devlin attended that 'madly Republican grammar school' she had learned from her father '...Ireland's story, told by an Irishman, with

the set of a set

. .

Ch.VII - p.3

an Irishman's feelings."<sup>5</sup> And many young Protestant lads learn from their fathers that the Good Man is King Billy who rides a White Horse that is kept in the Orange Hall up Sandy Row.<sup>6</sup> But whichever national identity a boy in Ulster possesses it will lead him into discord, not only with others who do not share his emotional committment, but sometimes within himself as he seeks to harmonise conflicting regime outlooks. For instance, what a British Parliament approves will not always please an Ulster Protestant conscience nor will obedience to British made laws always prove easy to Irish nationalists. National identity will thus have an important influence upon other political attitudes. One might hypothesize, for instance, that Catholic boys who identify most strongly with Ireland will be most likely to hold low positive feelings towards government and be readiest to endorse violence for a United Ireland. Reciprocally, Catholics who identify with Britain might be most likely to see government in a favourable light and favour peaceful political solutions. Among Protestant boys, those who feel themselves most strongly British might be highest in regard for government and most prepared to fight for a Protestant Ulster if they see such a State dependent upon the British connection. Alternatively, extreme views of government and political opposition might be found among Protestants who feel that Ulster is their 'homeland'.

In order to test these hypotheses the boys were asked, first, about their national identity, and then about strength of this identity. Among Protestants approximately one quarter , of boys chose a British national identity and approximately half

· · · · ·

Ch.VII - p.5

۰ ډ

found it easier to identify with Ulster. Among Catholics approximately 70 per cent of all boys identified themselves as Irish. Only ten per cent of Catholic boys felt themselves to be British and nine per cent took the Ulster identity which may be because they were thinking in terms of a nine, rather than a six county Province. (Ulster is one of the four ancient Provinces of Ireland whilst Northern Ireland, often referred to as Ulster, is a smaller region although part of the old Province of Ulster). (See Table VII: 1)

Only in the Primary schools do Catholic boys who identify with Ireland reveal lower positive affect to government than their co-religionists. Primary school Catholics are 35 per cent negatively oriented to government when they identify with Ireland compared to only 15 per cent of those who identify themselves as British. In both Primary and Secondary schools Catholics identifying with Ireland are more in favour of a violent removal of the Border. For instance, 71 per cent of Irish identifiers in Catholic Primary schools favoured violent political solutions to only 26 per cent of British identifiers. (See Table VII: 2) As hypothesized, Protestant boys who identify with Ulster as their 'homeland' are more ready to fight for a Protestant land than other co-religionists. For example, 80 per cent of 'Ulster' boys in the Secondary schools approved disorder to only 62 per cent identifying themselves as British. (See Table VII: 2) Although the quarter of who Protestant boys/identify with Britain are less violent in outlook than their 'Ulster' co-religionists they are, especially in the Secondary schools, readier to think in terms of disorder

# Table VII: 1 National Identities

British Irish Ulster Sometimes/Sometimes N.A. British /Irish

# Primary

| Protestant &         | 25                 |                            | 51      | 9          | 2            |
|----------------------|--------------------|----------------------------|---------|------------|--------------|
| Catholic \$          | 11                 | 69                         | 9       | 9          | 2 D.I. = 554 |
| Secondary            | 5 . <b>6</b> 11 t  | · · · \$                   | ч.<br>" |            | 1*. ,        |
| Protestant \$        | · · · 30           | <sup>**</sup> ** <b>11</b> | 48      | 38         | 3            |
| Catholic &           | 8                  | 75                         | 8       | 8          | 1 D.I. = 64% |
| ، بود میر<br>مرد میر | ، م <sup>ر م</sup> | د                          |         | ξετ - , ,e | Ŋ            |

# Table VII: 2 National Identities and Discord

|   | PROTESTAN  | TS                       | - <sup>-</sup> "К | CAT                     | HOLICS     |            |
|---|--|--------------------------|-------------------|-------------------------|------------|------------|
| Briti   | lsh Irish Ulster   |                          | Britis            | Irish                   | Ulster     |            |
| , i se              | · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · · ·  | Irish<br>\$              | <b>\$</b> - 4     |                         | ۲          | Irish<br>t |
| Primary   | e * 45   | می و بیر ، ،             | G.                | . *                     |            |            |
| Violent 43  | 35 - 760   | 46                       | - 126             | 71                      | 44         | 36         |
| Peaceful 51   | 64 <sup>~</sup> 40 <sup>-</sup>  | 54                       | <sup>∞</sup>      | 29                      | 56         | 64         |
| No answer 6   | <sup>1</sup> •   | - *                      | 2                 | ،<br>د به <b>ده</b> ر ۱ | . 🛥        | -          |
| Secondary   | دني وي در «<br>ب   | *                        |                   | ,                       |            |            |
| Violent <sup>®</sup> 62                                 | 50 80  | 54                       | 28                | 68                      | 47         | 42         |
| Peaceful 35   | 49 18  | 39                       | ·· 69             | 30                      | 50         | 54         |
| No answer 3   | °° <b>1 ° 2</b>  | 7                        | 3                 | - 2                     | 3          | 4          |
| ° (₹*** ********************************                |  | - L,                     |                   |                         |            |            |
|   | e a construction of the second s | ÷                        |                   |                         |            |            |
| iya ka san  | n i prim i man   |                          | ٨                 |                         |            |            |
|   | `♥<br>►♥ <sup>™</sup> ₩ <sup>™</sup> €   | ž,                       | ₿.                | -                       | <i>г</i> . |            |
|   | 4 <sup>6 6 6</sup> 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7 7   | ال موقع به<br>المراجع ال | s - 188 雪柳水。      |                         | 42         |            |
| and the second of                                       | *  | \$ x -                   | ´ .a ·            | s 2 % 5°                |            |            |
| 3 1 <sup>7</sup> 11 11 11 11 11 11 11 11 11 11 11 11 11 | the second s   | `₽`^;%# <i>\$</i> *      | 4 k               | مېر <del>ا</del>        |            |            |

than those Protestant boys who identify themselves as Irish or who have a mixed British/Irish National identity.

## Strength of National Identity

Protestants who identify with Britain split evenly between strong and ordinary identifiers. Among 'Ulster' Protestants those who feel 'strongly Ulster' outnumber those who feel 'just Ulster' by two to one. Also, approximately twice as many Irish identifiers feel strongly about their nationality to those who just accept it. Catholics who identify strongly with Ireland are only slightly more negative to government than other co-religionists. They are more ready to endorse violence for a United Ireland than ordinary Irish identifiers (D.I.'s: Secondary = 15%; Primary = 20%). (See Table VII: 3) Protestant boys who identify strongly with Britain are no more positive to government than ordinary British identifiers nor are they, in the primary schools, any more ready to endorse the use of political force. In the secondary schools, however, Protestants who feel strongly attached to their British identity are 20 per cent more likely to approve the use of force in upholding a Protestant Ulster than boys who feel 'just British'. Protestant boys who identify strongly with Ulster are not more positive to government than ordinary 'Ulster' children. But there is a tendency for the ordinary Ulster identifiers among Protestants to render more extreme positive affect to government. For instance, 36 per cent of ordinary Primary school identifiers were extremely positive to government compared to 20 per cent of strong

Protestant 'Ulster' boys.' Protestant boys who feel strongly attached to their Ulster identity are, however, the most ready among Protestants, to approve political violence. They are, in fact, 20 per cent more likely to approve of disorder than ordinary Ulster Protestants. (See Table VII: 3)

| Table VII: | VII: 3 Strength of National Identity and Discord |                |       |               |                        |      |  |  |  |
|------------|--|----------------|-------|---------------|------------------------|------|--|--|--|
| - ' ę      |  | PROTES:        | TANTS | <b>4</b> - 11 | CATHO                  | lics |  |  |  |
| ,          | British  | British        |       | Ulster        | Strongly<br>Irish<br>S |      |  |  |  |
| Primary    |  |                |       | ت.            |                        |      |  |  |  |
| Violent    | , 42   | <b>. 43</b> /  | 66 🚬  | 44            | 76.                    | 56   |  |  |  |
| Peaceful   | <b>52</b> * 2                                    | 57             | 32    | 56            | . 23                   | 41   |  |  |  |
| No answer  | : 6  | 3              | 2     | <b>-</b> .    | 1 :                    | 3    |  |  |  |
|            |  |                |       |               |                        | -    |  |  |  |
| Secondary  |  | ÷ .            | r i   |               |                        |      |  |  |  |
| Violent    | 73   | 51             | 86    | 67            | 72                     | 59   |  |  |  |
| Peaceful   | 25   | 46             | 11    | 32            | 25                     | 40   |  |  |  |
| No answer  | : 2  | 1. <b>3</b>    | . 3   | 1             | · 3                    | . 1  |  |  |  |
|            |  | , <b>1</b> , 4 |       | <b>,</b> ,    |                        |      |  |  |  |

i ta i

Scope of Community Identification

Boys in Ulster claiming an Irish nationality are legally separated by the Border from others sharing this political community. Boys claiming to be British are separated geographically by water from others having this nationality. That so many boys identify with Ulster indicates that Northern Ireland is, to many,

\* \* \* \*

· . . . . .

## Ch.VII - p.9

separated emotionally from both the Republic and Britain and is very much a nation in its own right. It is also possible that Catholic and Protestant boys within Ulster will feel a greater community of interests with each other than with coreligionists in either Britain or the Republic.

Gerry Fitt, Catholic leader of the Social Democratic and Labour Party and Westminster M.P. for West Belfast has been quoted as claiming to have more in common with Belfast Protestants than Catholics from West Mayo.<sup>7</sup> The Strathclyde adult sample (1968) found that more than two-thirds of Protestants and Catholics in Northern Ireland think that Ulstermen of the opposite religion are about the same as themselves. The adult survey also revealed that 66 per cent of Protestants felt their co-religionists in England to be much different from themselves and that a plurality of Catholics felt this way about their co-religionists in the Republic.<sup>8</sup>

To measure the extent of community identifications, boys were asked whether they thought people in Eggland and in the Republic were much different or about the same as themselves. In the case of younger children the Republic was also referred to as 'across the Border' and 'the South' to facilitate understanding. Elsewhere both Protestants and Catholics were asked similar questions about those of the 'other' religion in Northern Ireland. Such questions produced the following distributions:

|  |                    | ,            |           |                     |           |           |                     |  |
|--|--------------------|--------------|-----------|---------------------|-----------|-----------|---------------------|--|
|  |                    | PROTESTANTS  |           |                     | CATHOLICS |           |                     |  |
|  |                    | Primary<br>& | Secondary | Adults <sup>9</sup> | Primary   | Secondary | Adults <sup>9</sup> |  |
| Would you say<br>that people in<br>England are mu<br>different or<br>about the same<br>as you?                               | n<br>uch           | •            | •         | ·                   | ·         | •         | •                   |  |
|  | Different          | 35           | 43        | 66                  | 58        | 58        | 63                  |  |
|  | about same         | 64           | 56        | 29                  | 40        | 41        | 30                  |  |
|  | N.A.               | 1            | 1         | 5                   | 2         | 1         | 7                   |  |
| Would you say<br>that people in<br>the Republic<br>are much<br>different or<br>about the same<br>as you?                     |                    |              |           |                     |           |           |                     |  |
|  | Different          | 71           | 68        | 46                  | 35        | 30        | 48                  |  |
| , F  | about same         | 27           | 30        | 45                  | 62        | 68        | 44                  |  |
|  | N.A.               | 2            | 2         | 9                   | 3         | 2         | 7                   |  |
| Would you say<br>that Protesta<br>Catholic Child<br>in Northern<br>Ireland are m<br>different or<br>about the sam<br>as you? | nt/<br>dren<br>uch |              | ·         |                     |           |           |                     |  |
|  | Different          | 56           | 45        | 28                  | 47        | 41        | 14                  |  |
| · · · · ·  | about same         | 43           | 52        | 67                  | 49        | 57        | 81                  |  |
|  | N.A.               | Ĺ            | 3         | 4                   | 4         | 2         | 4                   |  |
|  |                    |              |           |                     | 50        |           |                     |  |

When the two school samples are compared with the Strathclyde adult sample (1968)<sup>10</sup> a fairly general trend appears in most cases. As far as fellow feelings with English people among Protestants are concerned this appears to drop off as one moves up the age

.

Ch.VII - p.11

ladder. For instance, 64 per cent of Primary boys felt much the same as people in England, to 56 per cent of Secondary Protestants, and only 29 per cent of adults. A trend is seen most clearly regarding identification with persons of the other This starts off low among Primary children and religion. climbs through the Secondary schools to highest identification among adults. This could be interpreted in two ways at least. Greater numbers identifying with members of the other religion could be a function of age." That is, as children mature they discover that they have more in common with persons of another religion than they were led to believe in their early lives. Alternatively, this trend could be a function of the level of community tensions at the times when the three samples were collected (Adult/1968; Secondary/early 1971; Primary/ early 1972). Interpreted this way the trends witnessed in feelings about members of the other religion represents a decisive worsening of community relations. The figures in a the 'Republic' question could mean, for Protestants, that over the last few years, relations with people in the 'South' have been on the decline, whilst among Catholics, identification with people in the Republic has become stronger since the onset of disorder. Among Protestants this approach means that identification with English people has increased rapidly over the last few years whilst for Catholics it has not been much affected. The most plausible explanation is that which can be applied most frequently to the data: that the increase in disorder over the years has caused greater separation between religions and higher identification with either people in Eire or England. This model can be applied in five out of six

cases. Other models - that age leads to greater understanding and either more or less association with others - can be applied less frequently.

× '

. . .

One might wish to hypothesize that since Protestants value the British connection (probably more so in 1971-72 than in 1973), those who say they feel much the same as people in England will be most positive to government (which upheld the Union) and readiest to approve of violence to continue a 'British way of life'. Catholics (who are sometimes regarded as Republicans to a man) who feel most like people in the Republic, may be expected to be more negative to government in Northern Ireland and readiest to endorse violence to take the Border out of Ireland. Since many Protestants regard all Catholics as a threat to the Constitution of Northern Ireland those who feel different to Catholic boys may be expected to be most positive to government and more inclined to accept violence than their co-religionists who feel much the same as Catholics. Catholics who feel much the same as Protestant boys in Northern Ireland may be expected to be more positive to government and less violent in political outlook than their co-religionists who feel that Protestants are a different sort of people altogether.

Protestants who feel much the same as people in England are not much more positive to government in Northern Ireland than their co-religionists who do not share their feelings. There are virtually no differences regarding disorder between Protestant Primary schoolboys by these characteristics,

but, in the Protestant Secondary schools, contrary to what was hypothesized, boys who feel different to people in England are readiest to approve of violence (D.I. = 13%). . On the other hand, Primary school Catholics who feel similar to people in England are both more positive to government and less inclined to accept disorder than their other age-group co-religionists. There are few differences in affect to government between Catholics who feel about the same or different to people in Eire. Those Catholics most closely associated with people in the Republic are only slightly readier to approve violence for a United Ireland. But Protestants who feel much the same as people across the Border are less likely to endorse violence, especially in the Secondary schools, than other Protestant boys. Among Protestants who feel estranged from, or close to, Catholics, few differences appear regarding affect and, in the Primary schools, over disorder. But Protestant Secondary schoolboys who feel different to Catholics are much readier than their age-group co-religionists to accept violence (D.I. = 31%). As hypothesized, Catholics who say they feel much the same as Protestants are much more positive to government and less violent in political outlook than their more estranged co-religionists. (See Tables VII: 4, 5, 6, 7)

.

|           | PROTESTANTS    |            | CATHOLICS      |             |            |
|-----------|----------------|------------|----------------|-------------|------------|
|           | Different<br>S | About same | Different<br>S | About<br>\$ | B anig     |
| Primary   |                |            |                |             |            |
| Violent   | 49             | 52         | 70             | 46          |            |
| Peaceful  | 51             | 45         | 29             | 50          |            |
| No answer | -              | 3 D.I.= 6  | 5 <b>8</b> 1   | 4           | D.I. = 24% |
| Secondary |                |            |                |             |            |
| Violent   | 76             | 63         | 64             | 55          |            |
| Peaceful  | 21             | 33         | 35             | 41          |            |
| No answer | 3              | 4 D.I.= 1  | 131 1          | 4           | D.I. = 9%  |

Table VII: 4 Feelings towards People in England and Discord

.

•

Table VII: 5 Feelings towards people in Eire and Discord

|           | PROTES         | TANTS      | CATHOLICS      |              |  |
|-----------|----------------|------------|----------------|--------------|--|
|           | Different<br>% | About same | Different<br>% | About same   |  |
| Primary   |                |            |                |              |  |
| Violent   | 56             | 41         | 51             | 67           |  |
| Peaceful  | 44             | 58         | 48             | 33           |  |
| No answer | -              | 1 D.I.=    | 15% 1          | - D.I. = 15% |  |
| Secondary |                |            |                |              |  |
| Violent   | 78             | 48         | 57             | 62           |  |
| Peaceful  | 19             | 48         | 42             | 35           |  |
| No answer | 3              | 4 D.I.=    | 30% 1          | 3 D.I. = 7%  |  |

· •

-, ->

·· .

# Table VII: 6 Feelings towards children/young people in the other religion in Ulster and Discord

|           | PROTESTANTS    |            | CATHOL    | ICS          |
|-----------|----------------|------------|-----------|--------------|
|           | Different<br>% | About same | Different | About, same  |
| Primary   |                |            |           |              |
| Violent   | 54             | 48         | 75        | 48           |
| Peaceful  | 45             | 50         | 24        | 52           |
| No answer | ` <b>1</b>     | 2 D.I. =   | 6% 1      | - D.I. = 28% |
| Secondary |                | ~          |           |              |
| Violent   | 85             | 54         | 72        | 52           |
| Peaceful  | 13             | 43         | 25        | 46           |
| No answer | 2              | 3 D.I      | 318 3     | 2 D.I. = 218 |

Table VII: 7 Feelings towards children/young people in the other religion an Ulster and Affect to Government

ς.

|           | PROTESTANTS    |            | CATHO          | LICS              |    |
|-----------|----------------|------------|----------------|-------------------|----|
|           | Different<br>% | About same | Different<br>% | About same        |    |
| Primary   |                |            |                |                   |    |
| POSITIVE  | 65             | 65         | 20             | 47                |    |
| positive  | 31             | 31         | 38             | 33                |    |
| negative  | 2              | 3          | 23             | 12                |    |
| NEGATIVE  | 2              | -          | 19             | 7                 |    |
| no answer | -              | 1 D.I.     | - 28 -         | $1 D.I. = 27^{2}$ | 29 |
| Secondary |                |            |                |                   |    |
| POSITIVE  | 29             | 35         | 13             | 21                |    |
| positive  | 50             | 53         | 39             | 51                |    |
| negative  | 16             | 8          | 29             | 20                |    |
| NEGATIVE  | . 4            | 3          | 17             | 5                 |    |
| no answer | , <b>1</b>     | 1 D.I.     | - 9% 2         | 3 D.I 219         | •  |

Ch.VII - p.15

# Summary: National Community

Using the same methodology as applied in the summary of chapter five reveals no important characteristics associated with affect to government among Primary school Protestants. Secondary Protestant schoolboys who identify themselves as British, and strongly British, are most positive to government whilst Protestant strong Ulster identifiers have much more negative feelings about government. Such findings may be encouraging for those seeking parity between Ulster and the rest of the United Kingdom. That Ulster identifiers thought less highly of government may be an indication that Protestants are only extremely positive to governments that uphold an 18th Century 'British way of life'.

Catholic Primary schoolboys who feel strongly Irish, that people in England, and Protestants, are different to them, reveal decreases in positive affect for government. On the other hand, those who feel that Protestants, and people in England, are much the same as themselves are more positively orientated to government. It may be encouraging to governments in Northern Ireland that Catholic boys who appear to be more integrated in the life of the Province are also most allegiant to government.

The Protestants and Catholics who identify strongly with Ulster or Ireland respectively are the most committed to violence in politics. The minority of Catholic boys who identify with Britain, and Protestants who identify with Ireland, are among the least violent. Identifying strongly with separate national communities within one state is likely to lead to violence for distinctive political treatment for the community. Reciprocally, identifying with the national community thought incongruent with one's general life pattern possibly leads to individual tension but also to a reduction of collective violence.

Protestant boys who feel the same as people in Eire, and to Catholics in Ulster, are less committed to violence than their co-religionists. Catholics, who feel that Protestants are different, are readier to endorse violence for a United Ireland. And, especially in the Primary schools, Catholics who identify with Protestants and people in England are less violent in political outlook. Sympathetic understanding between religions and nations may reduce the likelihood of violence whilst contact and understanding alone may increase it.

|                           | PROTESTANT |                | CATHOLIC |           |
|---------------------------|------------|----------------|----------|-----------|
| CHARACTERISTIC            | PRIMARY    | SECONDARY      | PRIMARY  | SECONDARY |
| (1) AFFECT                |            |                |          |           |
| National identity         |            |                |          |           |
| British                   |            | 12+            |          |           |
| Strongly British          |            | 14+            |          |           |
| Strongly Ulster           |            | 13-            |          |           |
| Strongly Irish            |            | ۰              | 11-      |           |
| Difference/similarity     |            | 1 K 1 <b>W</b> |          |           |
| English different         |            | •              | 12-      |           |
| English much the same     |            |                | 13+      |           |
| Protestants different     | s 7        |                | 17-      | 12-       |
| Protestants much the same |            | · · ·          | 14+      |           |

| CHARACTERISTIC                 | PROTESTANT<br>PRIMARY SECONDARY |     | Catholic<br>Primary Secondary |     |
|--------------------------------|---------------------------------|-----|-------------------------------|-----|
| (2) DISORDER                   |                                 |     |                               |     |
| National identity              |                                 |     |                               |     |
| Irish                          | 17-                             | 21- |                               |     |
| Strongly Irish                 |                                 |     | 16+                           | 12+ |
| Ulster                         | r<br>                           | 12+ |                               |     |
| Strongly Ulster                | 15+                             | 18+ |                               |     |
| British                        |                                 |     |                               | 32- |
| Just British                   |                                 | 18- |                               |     |
| Difference/similarity          |                                 |     |                               |     |
| People in Eire much the same   | 11-                             | 20- |                               |     |
| People in England much the sam | e                               |     | 14-                           |     |
| Catholics much the same        |                                 | 15- |                               |     |
| Catholics different            |                                 | 17+ |                               |     |
| Protestants much the same      |                                 |     | 15-                           |     |
| Protestants different          |                                 |     | 15+                           | 12+ |

(B) Religion

General value systems specify the standards persons should attempt to live up to and such precepts are usually expressed by institutions which render approval to those who conform with their basic teachings. The family, although the smallest unit for preserving the value-system, is probably the most effective due to the prolonged affective dependency of children during which the foundations of the system is laid. Such systems refer to what 'ought to be' and involve beliefs and symbols concerning ultimate meaning. When value systems include beliefs regarding the 'supernatural' they may be referred to as 'religions'.

Whilst the inhabitants of a country may experience conflict at the religious level there is generally some fundamental agreement about the most basic religious values. For instance, many common Christian concepts unite Protestants and Catholics whilst some very basic values divide them at a very comprehensive level, e.g. the source of divine authority. Here often, however, religious communities are drawn into politics through social, economic and political issues rather than through specifically, 'other-worldly' beliefs. When this occurs the religion is of tremendous importance as a reference group in a conflict situation and generally serves to embitter secular discord.

Research has found religious phenomona to be linked to many social attitudes and behaviours.<sup>12</sup> For instance, Lenski found that Jewish rospondents were most critical of the current operation of the American political system. They were followed by Negro Protestants, then by White Catholics, whilst white Protestants were the least critical of all. When such findings were controlled by social class no appreciable differences appeared.<sup>13</sup> Butler and Stokes found in Britain that the ties of religion to party are 'still plainly visible in the older segments of the electorate.<sup>14</sup> Religion, in Ulster, is still the most reliable guide to regime outlooks. Knowing which 'foot a man digs with' (his religion) is a better indicator of his attitudes towards the Constitution than knowing his social class or whether he is an urban or rural dwoller.

The importance of religion to people in Ulster was revealed in the survey of adults carried out by the Opinion Research Centre in 1968/69 which showed that belief in God was much more common in Northern Ireland than in Britain. Eightysix per cent of the Ulster sample agreed with the statement, 'I am certain there is a God', compared with 50 per cent in Britain. Seventy-four per cent of Northern Ireland respondents felt it was 'very important' that their country should be Christian compared to 48 per cent of British adults.<sup>15</sup> One aspect of the importance of religion in Ulster is the naturalness with which people identify themselves as either Protestants or Catholics. Such identification does not depend upon regularity of church attendance or firmness of Christian

belief. As Louis Gardner points out:

An individual's doubts about the veracity of specific Articles or Confessions, therefore, have made little difference to his own idea of his status. Yeats provided a good example of this, as did Bernard Shaw, who described himself alternately and without sense of inconsistency as a non-believer and an Irish Prot~stant. Again, when an Irishman declares himself a Protestant agnostic, although his statement may provoke a smile, it is easy to understand what he means. He is in effect offering a card of identity with some of the print missing, but which is still legible enough to tell us who and what he is: a man who knows he can change his opinions but not his natural stripes. 16

Gerry Fitt, on the other hand, spoke of religious communities ... as being 'unnatural'.:

> Little wonder that those who have struggled throughout the years to remove religious factors from politics have felt so frustrated when the

> > ŧ.

political framework within which they have been forced to work has been loaded to preserve these unnatural community antagonisms. The granting of an official state bassing on the institutions created 50 years ago only served to freeze and fossilise all political attitudes and political development in terms of the 18th century.<sub>17</sub>

Much disagreement about religious communities arises out of a confusion of 'religion' and 'belief'. According to the Bishop of Connor, Dr. Butler, 'There are thousands of people walking the streets of Belfast who are quite content to think themselves Christian and to wear Protestant and Catholic labels round their necks, but who have lost touch with God." He called the war in Ulster a 'religious war', but said that 'the strife was due to a war of religion, but not one of dogma or belief.<sup>18</sup> Religious beliefs are expressed in social life in differences regarding marital and sexual behaviour, but identification with a religious community, whilst not totally devoid of theology, is primarily concerned with social, economic, and political patterns which make a particular way of life acceptable to identifiers. As far as the great majority of people are concerned one is either born a Protestant or a Catholic and such a distinction could almost have genetic force. The importance of religious identification is overwholmingly important for political socialization in a country where many of the most basic and enduring disputes are interwoven with communities defined by their religious labels.

Earlier child political socilization studies provide

Ch.VII - p.21

few guidelines for such research in Northern Ireland. In the largest American studies of political learning in children Hess and Torney found few mean differences between Protostants and Catholics in general political orientations. They did find some connections between religion and party affiliation and political candidate choice, but this also reflected the views of their parents and thus diminishes the importance of the religious finding since children generally tend to follow their parents in party identification especially when both parents consistently vote for the same party. This does indicate, however, the importance of the family in both political and religious socialization. Easton and Dennis who are more concerned with political affect, using the same data, found that religious affiliation did not make any marked difference to idealization of political authorities.<sup>19</sup> In Ulster, however, where a psychiatrist can speak of the children being in danger of becoming another 'generation of bigots<sup>20</sup> religious and political differences are socialized early in life. For instance, a three-year-old Protestant child rejected a green crayon with the comment, "I don't want that colouring crayon. It's a fenian (Catholic) one."21 'No Pope Here', 'Not an Inch', 'God save the Queen' and 'Remember 1690', are wall signs that Protestant children may see every day just as some young Catholic children may read, 'Join your local brance of the Junion IRA', or see in large white letters on a gable-end 'PARAS-CHILD MURDERERS-KEEP OUT. ' Even some nursery rhymes underline the discord:

> If I had a penny Do you know what I would do? I would buy a rope and hang the pope and let King Billy through<sub>22</sub>

And the first nursery rhyme Bernadette Devlin remembers

learning was:

Where is the flag of England? Where is she to be found? Wherever there's blood and plunder They're under the British ground<sub>23</sub>

In order to test how the boys in the sample saw the nature of the religious discord in Ulster they were asked to say whether they thought Protestants and Catholics in Northern Ireland disagreed most about God and the Church or Northern 'Northern Ireland' is the question was used to stand Ireland. In the light of many adult's views for any secular discord. of the discord it might be hypothesized that most boys will also view it in social, economic and political terms rather than as a holy war over dogma and belief. It may be further hypothesized that those boys who see the discord in secular terms will be more likely to favour violent political solutions. If this is so it will be a further indication that religion as belief and dogma is of less importance in disorder than other aspects of the conflict.

Approximately 65 per cent of boys saw the discord in Northern Ireland in secular terms. There were, however, few differences of note regarding attitudes to discord between boys who say the conflict differently. Catholics Primary school children who felt that the 'war' was over religion, as such, were more extremely positive to government (...always wants to help...) than their co-religionists in Primary and Secondary schools who thought in terms of secular discord. Believing that discord in Ulster is caused by specifically supernatural disputes may help to promote, or prevent the loss of, good feelings towards secular authorities such as government.

Since religion in Ulster involves political discord one might expect that those most influenced by their religion would be most likely to hold extreme views of political authority and be most ready to approve of disorder. Alternatively, it might be hypothesized that the influence of one's Church and beliefs exercises constraint upon disorderly and extreme political tendencies. In order to test the effects of involvement in religion, three independent variables were used: (a) Churchattendance, (b) religious conservatism (c) strength of religious identification (which measures more than simply religious involvement).

# (a) Church Attendance.

Political differences have been noted between persons who attend church more and less frequently. Almond and Verba found that '...conservative voters who attend church every week or more frequently in Britain, Germany, Italy and Mexico are more opposed to inter-party marriage than those attending church less frequently, or not at all.<sup>24</sup> This suggests that frequent church attendance in some groups increases a sense of partisanship. But due to a wide variety of motives for church attendance, it is a very imperfect measure of involvement in religion. For instance, in a survey of sixth form Protestants in Northern Ireland (1968) only 36 per cent of boys who attended church gave positive reasons for doing so.<sup>25</sup>

Ch.VII - p.24

Frequency of church attendance in Ulster is much higher than in Britain.<sup>26</sup> Bleakley found 95 per cent of country and 70 per cent of Belfast young people attending church on Sunday 'nearly always.'<sup>27</sup> Barrit and Cartor refer to a survey of Queens University Belfast undergraduates in which 61 per cent claimed they had attended church the previous Sunday.<sup>28</sup> Greer recorded that 65 per cent of sixth form Protestant boys in Ulster attended church regularly (weekly, fortnightly or monthly).<sup>29</sup> The Strathclyde Loyalty Szrvey found that 66 per cent of adults in Northern Ireland attended church weekly or more often (46 per cent Protestants: 95 per cent Catholics), but that frequency of attendance had little affect upon some of their most basic political outlooks. 30 This suggests, for Protestants at least, that the sense of belonging to a community defined by religious labels is more important for regime outlooks than the frequency with which one attends a particular Protestant denomination.

Insofar as adult and schoolboy attitudes can be compared one might hypothesize that frequency of church attendance will have little or no influence upon affect to government or political discord. 'In order to test this, the boys were asked how often they attended Church or Mass. Protestant boys were allowed to include attendance at Sunday School, Bible Class or Confirmation classes as Church attendance. Catholic boys were curtailed in their answers to attendance at Mass during an 'ordinary week' which was defined as one without a Day of Obligation. These qualifications were not printed on the questionnaire to avoid confusion, but were slowly and

· \*,
carefully explained to each school group interviewed. The secrecy of response probably reduced the need to lie about frequency of attendance.

An overwhelming majority of Catholic boys attended Mass either weekly or more often (over 90 per cent). Approximately one quarter of Protestant boys attended church more than once a week and approximately 45 per cent once a week. Only eight per cent of Protestant boys proclaimed that they never attended church and about 15 per cent attended 'sometimes' (less than once a month). Frequency of church attendance makes little or no difference, among Catholics or Protestants of any age, to how they feel about government or to their attitudes to discord. Any qualifications to this would include that Catholic Secondary boys who attend more than once a week are slightly less violent in outlook than weekly attenders (D.I. = 9%) and that Protestants who never attend church are slightly more negative to government than other Protestants. Among both adults and schoolboys, frequency of church attendance has virtually no influence upon the most basic political attitudes. This suggests that the churches are unable, ... or do not attempt, to influence the political attitudes of those most frequently within their reach. Schoolboys who regularly frequent Church do not differ greatly in their political attitudes from other co-religionists in Ulster.

• • • •

f '. . .

· · · ·

e sperie instantion in the

ولي ا

1.44 14

.

· · · · · ·

· · · · ·

1

5.1

(b) Religious Conservatism

Religious conservatism, as a measure of involvement in a religion, is taken here to mean 'adherence to fundamental and traditional ways of thinking about one's faith as opposed to modernistor liberal outlooks. ' The Loyalty Survey found that three-quarters of Ulster adults believed that the miracles of the bible happened just as the bible describes them. 31 Sixth form Protestant boys in Ulster were only slightly more likely than English boys to believe that the Old and New Testaments were inspired (approximately 40% in Ulster believed, 34% Don't Know, and 22% didn't believe). 32 Lenski, however, found that intellectual assent to the prescribed doctrines of one's faith or church was irrelevant for most aspects of secular life. He suggests that religious orthodoxy leads to a compartmentalization of life in the religious and secular sphere.<sup>33</sup> Thus, many extremely orthodox people are 'otherwordly' in outlook; are mainly preoccupied by their religion and accept the political powers that be as ordained of God. On the other hand, it has been suggested that conservative doctrinal beliefs might indicate '...general ideological rigidity in thinking about problems and hence lead to Ultraism among Protestants, and rebellion among Catholics. 34

In order to tase these ideas, boys were asked how important they thought it was to believe <u>all</u> that the Church/ Bible teaches. Over 80 per cent of Primary boys felt that it was 'very important' to believe all the Church/Bible teaches and 12 per cent that this was 'fairly important'. Since so few boys took up other positions it only makes sense to compare

, N

these two groups in the Primary schools. In the Secondary schools 45 per cent of Protestants and 67 per cent of Catholics took up the extremely conservative view (very important to bolieve) whilst 34 per cent of Protestants and 25 per cent of Catholics thought it 'fairly important' to have complete faith in the Church or Bible. Only six per cent of Secondary school Catholics and 17 per cent of Protestants found it either 'not very' or 'not at all' important to believe in this conservative fashion.

**1** -

, " Generally speaking, degrees of religious conservatism are irrelevant as predictors of either affect for government or attitudes to discord. Two exceptions are found among Protestants. Primary school Protestants who believe completely in all the Bible teaches are more positive to government (D.I. between 'very' and 'fairly important' groups = 22%). Among Secondary school Protestants the ten per cent who find it 'not at all important to believe all the Bible teaches are much lass violent in political outlook than the most conservative group. (D.I. = 20%). The most general conclusion that one may draw from such findings, however, is that those who most completely accept the guidance of the Catholic Church or the Bible do not differ greatly in their political outlooks from others of the same religion in Northern Ireland. As with church attendance, this is another indication that religiously defined discord in Ulster is fought on secular battlefields.

, Nio .

## (c) Strength of Religious Identification

In countries where religious and secular aspects of life are thoroughly intertwined, strength of identification with a religion signifies more than simply strength of beliefs about the supernatural. Whilst a strong inward commitment to a particular religion may signify that a set of beliefs will greatly influence behaviour, the specifically theological aspects of religion for a strong Catholic or Protestant may be of less importance for political attitudes (as with church attendance and religious conservatism) than identification with a community best known by its religious colours. For instance, in Northern Ireland, there may be atheists who think they are strong Protestants and Marxists who would describe themselves as strong Catholics.

Research has revealed that Ulster adults and adolescents have stronger Christian beliefs than comparable persons in Britain. 35 The Loyalty Survey found that 42 per cent of adults identified strongly with their particular religion (45% Protestants- 38% Catholics). 36 Apter notes that the effects of mixing politics and religion are such ... that they strengthen the authority in the State and weaken the flexibility of the society.<sup>37</sup> When religious communities compete for political authority the religious stratification of society is strengthened, the religious parts become more inflexible, but the authority of the State is weakened. Thus. where religion and politics are divisive one might hypothesize that those who identify most strongly with their religious community will be most likely to hold either extremely negative or positive views of authority and be readiest to approve disorder to either uphold or destroy the political regime. Alternatively, if strength of religion involves specifically theological components strong identifiers may be restrained in their political attitudes due to otherwordliness and obsdience because '...the powers that be are ordained of God.'<sup>38</sup>

There are similarities between Primary schoolboys and between Secondary schoolboys of both religions regarding their strength of religious identification. In the Primary schools the boys are more likely to identify themselves as either strong Protestants or Catholics (approximately 70 per cent) whereas in the Secondary schools more than half say they are 'average' in religious strength whilst only approximately 40 per cent are strong in commitment. (See table VII: 8)

Table VII: 8 Strength of Religious Identification Strong Average Neither No answer PRIMARY Protestants \$ 70 20 10 Catholics % 73 18 5 4 D.I. = 7% SECONDARY Protestants % 50 41 6 3 Catholics % 57 38 D.I. = 7% 3 2

Whilst strength of identification with a religion, or with a religious community, makes little difference to affect to government among Protestants the Catholic boys who identify strongly with their faith are inclined to be more negative to

government than average identifiers (D.I.'s: Primary = 11%; Secondary = 15%). There are larger differences, however, between strong and average identifiers regarding political discord. In every case the strong identifiers are readier to approve any means either to keep Ulster Protestant or to remove the Border. (See Table VII: 9) For instance, 86 per cent of 'strong' Protestants in the Secondary schools approve disorder to 60 per cent of 'avorage' strength Protestants; 70 per cent of more committed Secondary Catholic schoolboys believe that violence is justifiable to only 54 per cent of 'avorage' Catholics. It is of interest that so many of the boys who feel neither strong or average religionists are so pacific in outlook, but not very important since so few of them exist. As expected, the question least likely to measure specifically supernatural content is most likely to be a predictor of political attitudes.

| Table VII: 9 | Stre        | ngth of      | Religious    | Identi | fication     | and Discord  |  |
|--------------|-------------|--------------|--------------|--------|--------------|--------------|--|
|              | PROT        | PROTESTANTS  |              |        | CATHOLICS    |              |  |
|              | Strong<br>% | Average<br>% | Neither<br>% | Strong | Average<br>% | Neither<br>S |  |
| Primary      |             |              |              |        |              |              |  |
| Violent      | 56          | 42           | 27           | 64     | 58           | 24           |  |
| Peaceful     | 41          | 57           | 73           | 36     | 42           | 72           |  |
| No answer    | 3           | 1            | -            | -      | -            | 4            |  |
| Secondary    |             |              | •            |        |              |              |  |
| Violent      | 86          | 60           | 35           | 70     | 54           | 70           |  |
| Peaceful     | 14          | 38           | 62           | 27     | 44           | 30           |  |
| No answer    | -           | 2            | 3            | 3      | 2            | -            |  |

To investigate the political consequences of negative aspects of involvement in religious communities such as estrangement and perceived hostility three questions were used. The first, to measure estrangement between religious communities, simply asked the boys to indicate whether or not they were friendly with any children or young people in the other religion. The second question, to measure perceived hostility, asked if the boys thought that <u>all</u> the members of the other religion wanted to destroy the Protestant/Catholic religion. It was emphasised at every administration of the questionnaire that one was referring to all the members of the other religion. Thus, replies in the affirmative indicates that boys perceived total hostility from the other religious community. The third question, put to Secondary boys only involved asking them whether or not they felt that persons of their religion were discriminated against.

(d) Estrangement

Professor J. Ernest Davey wrote that '...Irishmen have, on the whole, never learned to differ with friendship or tolerance...'<sup>39</sup> In Ulster, people who differ politically may never find friends who differ from them until it is too late to agree, and tolerance may be in short supply because some goals are mutually exclusive. But although Protestants and Catholic school-children attend different school systems, social friendships are common across such divides, but often do not develop until divisive ideas are well formulated in the minds of companions. But Protestant and Catholic are not the only names of importance in Ulster. In smaller towns and country districts much more intricate relationships exist and religious boundaries become blurred below the political level. Even thought the present troubles have polarized the communities

to a greater extent than perhaps ever before the extent of interdependence between religions in many districts continues. For instance, when one of the quieter Provincial towns was bombed for the first time, the primary reaction of those interviewed by television reporters was to emphasise the good community relations and to blame outsiders for their trouble.

One would expect that those having friends across religious boundaries would be more tolerant than those who do Greely and Rossi, however, found that American Catholics not. with less contact with others outside their religion tend to be more tolerant than those with greater numbers of friends outside the Catholic faith. They compare two groups: (1) Catholics who attended Catholic schools who found more than half their friends among Catholics at the age of seventeen; (2) Catholics without Catholic school education who had half, or less than half, their friends Catholics at the same age. Whilst they find group (2) more involved in the larger American community they find group (1) more tolerant towards the demands for civil liberties for others. They suggest that the emotional well-being provided by the religious ghetto (group 1) makes for a more relaxed and tolerant attitude towards others. 40 Applied to Ulster this may mean that boys lacking friends in the other religion will be more pacific in political opposition. But any comparisons between the Greely and Rossi sample and this one must be qualified in a number of ways. (1) Greely and Rossi rely upon the recall of Catholic adults regarding their friendship patterns at the age of seventeen- (2) the American sample consisted of Catholic adults who had attended Catholic and

State schools; (3) the Greely and Rossi sample was drawn from a political community where there is comparitively widespread agreement regarding the nature and boundaries of the State; (4) American political divisions do not follow religious lines to the same extent as they do in Ulster. Taking into account the different political circumstances in America and Ulster one might hypothesize that those boys who have no friends across religious lines will be more extreme in their views of government since they have little chance of understanding how boys in the other religion feel about political authority. Also, that those without friends of the other faith will be readiest to approve fighting for political goals since they have not been exposed to the political aspirations of 'others' in an atmosphere of friendship.

Approximately half the Primary and three-fifths of Secondary Schoolboys in both religions indicated that they had friends in the other religion. Perhaps cross-religions friendships were still developing among the Primary schoolboys. Alternatively, perhaps such development had been arrested by escalating violence. Among Protestants political differences between those with and without Catholic friends are small except among Secondary schoolboys regarding discord. Here 86 per cent of those without Catholic friends approved of physical violence for a Protestant Ulster to only 58 per cent of those who had Catholic friends. (See Table VII: 10)

the second se

s. <sup>\*</sup>,¥

|           | PROTESTANTS          |                        | CATHOL                      | ICS                      |
|-----------|----------------------|------------------------|-----------------------------|--------------------------|
|           | Mas Catholic         |                        | Has Protesta                | nt                       |
|           | friend or<br>friends | No Catholic<br>friends | <b>griend or</b><br>friends | No Protestant<br>friends |
|           | (47%)                | (52%)                  | (55%)                       | (41%)                    |
| Primary   | •                    | •                      | •                           | •                        |
| Violent   | 46                   | 54                     | 50                          | 77                       |
| Peaceful  | 49                   | 45                     | 50                          | 22                       |
| No answer | 5                    | 1                      |                             | 1                        |
|           | D.I. = 8%            |                        | D.I. = 28%                  |                          |
|           | (58*)                | (37%)                  | (66%)                       | (32%)                    |
| Secondary | ۲                    | *                      | s.                          | ۲                        |
| Violent   | 58                   | 86                     | 53                          | 75                       |
| Peaceful  | 39                   | 13                     | 44                          | 23                       |
| No answer | 3                    | 1                      | 3                           | 2                        |
|           | D.I.                 | - 28%                  | D.I +                       | 22%                      |

Table VII: 10 Friendship Across Religious Lines and Discord

Among Catholics the differences between boys who know Protestants on a friendly basis and those who only 'know them' are much more striking. Catholics without Protestant friends are much more negative to government (D.I.s: Primary = 19%; Secondary = 22%) (See Table VII: 11) and violent in opposition (D.I.s: Primary = 28%; Secondary = 22%). Having friends in the 'other' religion may make it <u>less likely</u> that one will fight for goals denigrated by friends. On the other hand, people in Ulster expect their friends to stand up for their contrary ideals and fighting friends may become necessary at some stage since more than half of those with friends in the 'other' religion still endorsed political violence.

> ۰ ۲

# Table VII: 11 Friendship across Religion lines among Catholics and Affect.

#### Catholics Only

|           | Has Protestant friend<br>or friends | No Protestant<br>friends |
|-----------|-------------------------------------|--------------------------|
|           | *                                   | 8                        |
| Primary   |                                     |                          |
| POSITIVE  | 42                                  | 24                       |
| positive  | 35                                  | 34                       |
| negative  | 14                                  | 23                       |
| NEGATIVE  | 9                                   | 19                       |
| no answer | <del>-</del> .                      | - D.I. = 19%             |
| Secondary |                                     |                          |
| POSITIVE  | 20                                  | 12                       |
| positive  | 50                                  | 40                       |
| negative  | 22                                  | 27                       |
| NEGATIVE  | 5                                   | 20                       |
| no answer | 3                                   | 1 D.I. = 20%             |

## (e) Perceived hostility.

The O.R.C. survey of Ulster adults (1968-69) found that approximately one-quarter of respondents were not very strongly, or not, in favour of a closer relationship between the Catholic and Protestant churches or of moving towards the unity of all the Christian churches.<sup>41</sup> The Loyalty Survey (1968) found that approximately three-fifths of Ulster adults felt that religion would always make a difference about the way people felt about one another in Northern Ireland, and 35 per cent thought that there would be no big changes in relations between Protestants and Catholics in the next ten years.<sup>42</sup> Thus, even before the outbreak of violence in 1969, a considerable proportion of Ulster people not only emphasized the perpetual divisiveness of religion but expressed approval of keeping apart on the level of institutional religion at least.

Barrit and Carter emphasise the importance of religious images in the relationship between the two major communities in Ulster. 43 Many Protestants believe that all Catholics see them as incapable of salvation outside of the Catholic church whilst official Catholic teaching expresses the importance of following conscience as the way to salvation for those who do not 'know the true church'. Hany Catholics regard the fragmentation of Protestantism as a sign of heresy and the wrath of God and fail to understand the deep unity between many Protestants regarding the 'simple gospel' and the 'defense of liberty.' Never having experienced religious conflict in the Scottish Borders of my childhood, I found, during my earliest visits to Ulster in the 1950's, a zealous outlook upon religion which surprised me greatly. As Barrit and Carter suggest, 'It is probable that the conflict of Protestants and Catholics cause elements in both groups to hold extreme and narrow-minded views. 44 During political conflict between religious communities people define themselves politically by their religious identity whilst at the same time their sense of belonging to a religious group is strengthened by the political discord. In the event of disorder, or civil war, political loyalties are defined in the simplest of terms. For example, William Craig, the leader of the Protestant Vanguard movement was reported as having warned that '...there could be civil war within the next six months and it could become an all out

Protestant versus Catholic conflict.<sup>45</sup> As disorder increases the tendency to see <u>all</u> members of the other religious community as having hostile intensions becomes more widespread.

Morris Fraser suggests that in Ulster, stereotyped images of the other religion proceed actual fear and hostility aroused during open hostilities. He writes:

> It is basically a question of timing--of what A stereotype is born in a comes first. situation of economic competition--when there are not enough jobs to go round. Exclusion of the minority group from employment is rationalised by attributing to its members undesirable qualities. Frustrated by this discrimination, the out-group finally takes to open demonstration against the majority, who then point to this behaviour as illustrative of the out-groups essential unworthiness. The justice of their policy of exclusion is thus reinforced, and still / more rigorous measures are instituted. This, the perfect example of a self-fulfilling prophecy, has been enacted in miniature in the classroom; but also on a full scale in almost every plural. society in the world. First the stereotype then the undesirable behaviour. 46

Whether the stereo-type produces the hostility, or actual institutions and events come before anger, it may be hypothesized that schoolboys who see <u>all</u> the members of the other religion as hostile will be more extreme in political outlooks. Protestants may be more highly positive to the government of a "Protestant Parliament" and hold themselves in readiness to fight for a Protestant Ulster. Catholics who have visions of the Protestant population as a hostile army drawn up against them may be expected to regard a Protestant government as having malevolent intentions towards them and to highly approve of all those who have taken up arms in the fight for Irish unity.

Approximately two-fifths of all boys agreed that all members of the other religion were hostile towards their faith/ way of life. Among Secondary school Protestants, those agreeing that every Catholic was a potential enemy, were more negative to government than co-religionists who did not share their battlefield view of Ulster life. (Those accepting the total hostility view of Catholics were 20 per cent negative to government compared to eight per cent of co-religionists). Also Catholic Primary schoolboys who vie Protestants as totally arrayed against their faith/way of life are more hostile to government (D.I. = 16%). Attitudes to discord vary widely between boys who see the intentions of all the 'others' differently. (See Table VII: 12) For instance, 87 per cent of Secondary Protestant schoolboys who think all Catholics are hostile to them are also believers in physical violence to keep Ulster Protestant. And 82 per cent of Primary school Catholics who learn political lessons through a filter of complete hostility justify violence in pursuit of a United Ireland. Table VII: 12 Some say that all Catholics/Protestants want to

destroy the Protestant/Catholic Religion

| ۰۰ ( <sup>۲</sup> | PF    | OTESTANTS   | CATHOLICS  |               |     |
|-------------------|-------|-------------|------------|---------------|-----|
|                   | Agree | Disagree    | Agree<br>% | Dis.jrec<br>S |     |
| Primary Six       |       |             |            | . •           |     |
| Violent           | 69    | 57          | 82         | 57            |     |
| Peaceful          | 25    | 42          | 18         | 43            |     |
| No answer         | 6     | 1 D.E.=     |            | - D.I.=       | 25% |
| Secondary         | , .   | * 4 - 4 - 4 |            |               |     |
| Violent           | 87    | 51          | 73         | 51            |     |
| Peaceful          | 13    | 47          | 25         | 46            |     |
| No answer         | -     | 2 D.I.=     | 361 2      | 3 D.I.=       | 225 |

Protestants who accept total Catholic hostility as a fair description of the Ulster conflict may be more negative to government which they perceive as being too fair to enemies. Catholics on the other hand, may see government as part of the total Protestant conspiracy against them. Both Protestants and Catholics, as one would expect, are readier to justify violence in pursuit of their political goals when they see political enemies bent, not only upon their defeat, but upon the destruction of what they cherish. Schoolboys in Ulster, like many adults, build their political attitudes upon long standing, though often well concealed, animosities.

#### (f) Religious Discrimination.

Whatever the basis in fact, people in Ulster believe that they are sometimes discriminated against because of their religion. Catholics complain of discrimination against them because of their presumed attitudes to the Constitution of Northern Ireland whilst some Protestants justify discriminating against Catholics lest they outbreed the Protestants and vote the Province into a United Ireland with all the horrors that entails for many Protestants. Protestants too, complain of discrimination against them on the grounds of their religion in housing, in areas controlled by Catholic local councils; employment, by Catholic employers, and by the British Army who "should know better than to try to push loyal citizens about." The meaning of the word - discrimination - is much better understood in Catholic than in Protestant schools. Numerous protestant pupils asked what the word meant, but no Catholic ever raised such a query.

Approximately half of the Protestant Secondary boys believed that Protestants were discriminated against as did seven-tenths of Catholics about themselves. Only one-tenth of Catholics disagreed that forms of discrimation were practiced against their co-religionists whilst one-fifth were uncertain. Appruximately a quarter of the Secondary Protestants disagreed with the idea that they were discriminated against and another quarter were uncertain. There are few differences between Protestants regarding affect to government by these views. Catholics accepting that discrimination against them exists on religious grounds are more negative to government than many of their co-religionists who do not share their view. For example, 37 per cent of those sensing discrimination are negative to government compared to 22 per cent of their coreligionists who do not feel disadvantaged because of their church, school, district or name. Those who either whinge or lambast about discrimination are more violent in their political relations. (See Table VII: 13) For instance, 82 per cent of Protestants who complain of discrimination favour disorder to only 53 per cent of those who do not sense practiced disadvantages. The small minority of Catholics who do not feel discriminated against are well below the Catholic figure for disorder approval.

Table VII: 13 Some people say that there is Discrimination against Protestants/Catholics in Northern Ireland and Discord

|                | PROTESTANTS |               | CATHOLICS |            |               |      |
|----------------|-------------|---------------|-----------|------------|---------------|------|
|                | Agree<br>%  | Disagree<br>% | D.K.      | Agree<br>% | Disagree<br>% | D.K. |
| Secondary Only | 2           |               |           |            |               |      |
| Violent        | 82          | 53            | 60        | 66         | 44            | 46   |
| Peaceful       | 16          | 45            | 37        | 33         | 54            | 52   |
| No answer      | 2           | 2             | 3         | 1          | 2             | 2    |
|                | (D.         | I. = 29%)     |           |            | (D.I. = 2     | 25)  |

Among Catholics, acceptance of discrimination is Thus, those who sense discrimination are like most general. other Catholics in their political attitudes. It is the minority of Catholics who are uncertain of discrimination, who are the 'odd men out' in that they are more positive to government and less committed to political violence. This suggests that only a prolonged period of planned advantages to the Catholic community will remove the sense of discrimination. Among Protestants, however, the sense of discrimination is not so entrenched. Nevertheless, among the one-half of Protestant boys who did complain of discrimination, political violence is accepted by four-fifths of them. This suggests that when discrimination is felt by Protestants this has a greater effect upon political attitudes than among Catholics. Thus, a prolonged period of planned advantages to Catholics may provoke increased violence among Protestants.

#### (g) Deference to Religious Leadership

Whillst Protestants in Ulster may have high respect for their religious leaders they are not so deferential towards them as Catholics who are much more likely to agree that it is 'very important' to do whatever a priest tells them. The Loyalty Survey found 60 per cent of Catholic and 30 per cent of Protestant adults declaring that it was 'very important' to do whatever a priest/minister told them.<sup>47</sup> It has been suggested that one of the large differences between Catholics and Protestants, in this respect, is that Protestants are religious through inner motivations, Catholics because of social pressures. It is further suggested that such differences arise from internalised

5

motivations connected with the super-ego, or conscience in Protestants, while Catholics are more likely to project their conscience onto the priesthood.<sup>48</sup> This may have consequences for political attitudes since an internalized conscience may be more flexible thus finding it easier to accept the legitimacy of different value systems. Martin Seymour Lipsot writes:

.+ Democracy requires a universalistic political belief system in the sense that it accepts various different ideologies as legitimate. And it must be assumed that religious value systems which are more universalistic, in the sense of placing less stress on being the only true church, will be more compatible with democracy than those which assume that they are the only truth. The latter belief, which is held much more strongly by the Catholic than by most other Christian churches, makes it difficult for the religious value system to help legitimate a political system which requires as part of its basic value system the belief that 'good' is served best through conflict emong opposing beliefs. AQ

It has been further posited that due to a Catholic's extreme dopendence upon the clergy because of the Catholic sacramental system, the authority, and acclesiastical organization of the Church, he is predisposed to accept highly authoritarian political regimes.<sup>50</sup> Thus, Catholicism has been acen as hindering democracy by conditioning people to accept authoritarian regimes and in producing intolerant attitudes toward those who hold differing ideologies.

Important qualifications may be added to these generalizations. One is that Christian Democratic parties exist in traditionally Catholic countries which have repudiated political authoritarianism without having to challenge the theological authority of the Catholic Church. Also, it has been suggested that the Catholic Church just happens to exist in some countries where democratic institutions have not developed.<sup>51</sup> More relevant for this study is the fact that many Irish Catholics defied the authority of the Church in order to join the I.R.A. and fight for nationalism, and that many Ulster Catholics were very far from accepting the legitimacy of the Ulster government.

John Whyte suggests in his study of Church-State relations in Modern Eire that the State was very far from being theocratic. At the same time he notes that the Catholic Church was not just another interest group, but occupied a position regarding the State somewhere between the theocratic and interest group position, a position which varied according to the circumstances and nature of the problem concerned.<sup>52</sup> Whilst the Catholic Church may have made less use of its privileged position in the Eire Constitution than it could have, there may be, however, many issues which failed to surface because of this position. If, however, these qualifications are of minimal importance and the Catholic Church does produce inflexible, intolerant minds predisposed to accept authoritarian regimes these characterists should show up most clearly in those Catholics who are most deforential to religious leaders.

A number of conflicting hypotheses regarding the political attitudes of those most deferential to religious leadership seems possible. Priests are held in high respect among children and adolescents in Ulster.<sup>53</sup> Thus their opinions may be followed closely especially by those who are most deferential to them. Fahy found his sample of Ulster

priests to be Irish in national identification and critical of the constitutional position in Northern Ireland. 54 Thus, the most deferential to priests may be most negative towards the government which upheld the Constitution and readlest to approve violence for a United Ireland. Alternatively, the Catholic Church has officially preached obedience to the civil powers and condemned violence. Or again, Richard Rose found that the readiness of Catholics to respect the direction of priests was unrelated to views about illegal political demonstrations.<sup>55</sup> Among Protestants one might hypothesize that the most deferential to ministers of religion will be most dedicated to Protestantism and thus readlest to use force to uphold a Protestant Ulster and be positively orientated to a 'Protestant Parliament' and its government. Alternatively, the most deferential Protestants may come under the influence of ministers of religion who demonstrate against violence and preach peaceful politics. Such conflicting hypotheses are possible and realistic because religious leaders by no means speak with one voice even within the major communities. If there is no connection between degrees of deference to religious leaders and political attitudes one may say that persons of similar deference levels are coming under the influence of differing political views or that deference to religious leadership is unimportant for political behaviour.

Primary schoolboys are more deferential to religious leaders than secondary school pupils in both religions. Among Primary schoolboys 67 per cent of Protestants and 78 per cent do of Catholics accepted that it was 'very important' to/whatever

a priest or minister of religion told them. Only 20 per cent of Primary schoolboys were less deferential and prepared to say that such obedience was just 'fairly important'. Among Secondary schoolboys 35 per cent of Protestants and 60 per cent of Catholics were very deferential to their ministers and priests (very important to obey) whilst approximately 30 per cent in both religions felt that obedience was only 'fairly important'. Only ten per cent of Catholic secondary schoolboys thought obedience to a priest less than fairly important whilst among Protestant Secondary pupils 15 per cent found obedience to whatever a minister said 'not very' and 11 per cent 'not at all' important.

The Catholic Primary schoolboys who are most deferential to priests are more likely to endorse violence in politics (D.I. between most and less deferential group = 16%) Among the seven per cent of Secondary school Catholics who felt it was 'not very important' to obey priests there is an increase in negative affect to government. . . (They are 52 per cent negative compared to 33 per cent in the more deferential groups of Secondary school Catholics) On the one hand, some of the most deferential Catholic boys are more violent in outlook than other co-religionists, but some of the less deferential are more negative to government. Among Protestants, only the Primary schoolboys who are most deferential to ministers of religion are likely to render the most extreme positive affect to government. For instance, among those saying that it is 'very important' to do whatever a minister says, are 72 per cent who think government will

always want to help people like them compared to approximately 50 per cent in the less deferential categories. Among Protestant Secondary schoolboys, degrees of deference towards a minister of religion makes virtually no difference to basic political wttitudes.

That some of the less deferential Catholic Primary schoolboys are also less violent in political outlook than those ready to follow the priest in all things may suggest that priests are unsuccessful in restraining the violence in those most prepared to listen to them. Alternatively, it may suggest that many boys believe their priests favour a violent solution to Ireland's problems. The Catholic Secondary schoolboys who were less deferential to priests are also more negative to government which may suggest an all-round loss of respect for authority. Alternatively it may indicate that boys who are negative to government give less weight to the views of priests who preach obedience to the Civil powers. That Primary school Protestants who are less deferential to ministers should be less enthusiastic about government may, again, represent an all-round loss of respect for authorities. The Protestants most deferential to ministers are much the same in their views of discord as the bulk of their coreligionists. Thus Protestant ministors are no more successful in restraining violence among those most ready to listen to them than are Catholic priests. Alternatively, Protestant ministers may have raised passions which have found a violent outlet. Perhaps the only conclusions that can be drawn are either that religious deference and political attitudes are

unrelated or that religious leaders speak with so many different voices in politics that it is, at the moment, impossible to test whether any general relationship exists.

Summary: Religion

Using the same methodology as that described in the summary of chapter five reveals the following:

(1) AFFECT

.

|   | PROTE   | STANT     | CATHOLIC |           |  |
|---|---------|-----------|----------|-----------|--|
| CHARACTERISTIC                                      | PRIMARY | SECONDARY | PRIMARY  | SECONDARY |  |
|   |         |           |          |           |  |
| Importance of obeying<br>minister/priest            |         |           |          |           |  |
| fairly important                                    | 15-     |           |          |           |  |
| not at all important                                |         | 13-       |          |           |  |
| Importance of believing<br>all Church/Bible teaches |         |           |          |           |  |
| fairly important                                    | 18-     |           | 14-      |           |  |
| not very important                                  |         | 13-       |          |           |  |
| No friends among.<br>Protestants                    |         |           | 13-      | 13-       |  |
| Discrimination against<br>Catholics exists          |         |           |          |           |  |
| Uncertain   |         |           |          | 12+       |  |

- 1

| (2) DIEORDER  | PROTESTANT |           | CATHOLIC |           |  |
|---|------------|-----------|----------|-----------|--|
| CHARACTERISTIC  | PRIMARY    | SECONDARY | PRIMARY  | SECONDARY |  |
| Everyone in the other<br>religion is hostile                    |            |           |          |           |  |
| Agree   | 22+        | 19+       | 22+      | 13+       |  |
| Disagree  |            | 19-       |          |           |  |
| Strongth of Religion  |            |           |          |           |  |
| neither strong or average                                       | 26-        |           |          |           |  |
| strong  |            | 18+       |          |           |  |
| Friends in other<br>religion                                    |            |           |          |           |  |
| Yos   |            | 11-       | 13-      |           |  |
| 110   |            | 18+       | 17+      | 15+       |  |
| Discrimination is<br>practiced against<br>Protestants/Catholics |            |           |          |           |  |
| Yes   |            | 14+       | ,        |           |  |
| No  |            | 17-       |          |           |  |
| Uncertain   |            |           |          | 15-       |  |
| Fairly important to<br>obey a priest                            |            |           | 13-      | ×.        |  |
| Not very important<br>to believe all Bible<br>teaches           |            | 17-       |          |           |  |

En general, positive measures of involvement in one's religion tell us very little about political attitudes. That the question about strength of religion (which measures more than doctrinal belief) differentiates the boys to a greater

and the second secon

· \*2

برلاخ المحاص

a . 1 . . . .

ì

٠

extent than the other questions is some indication that religion, as community, is more important in politics than religion as doctrine. Neither how often a boy attends church or how conservative he is regarding his faith predicts, to any great extent, how he will react politically. On two occasions this general rule is overturned. For instance, the Primary boys who are less than very conservative about the Bible are well below the Protestant primary distribution for positive affect to government. The difference of 22 per cent between these groups is not caused by extremely high positive affect among the 'fundamentalists' but by low extreme affect in the group not totally committed to believing all the Bible says. Only 12 per cent of Primary Protestant boys belong to this less fundamental group but they may represent a movement in Primary schools away from thinking of government in the most glowing torms. Thus loss of faith in the importance of the Bible in one's life may be accompanied, among primary School Protestants, with loss of faith in government. Loss of faith in government, however, could be interpreted as a more realistic view of politics coupled with a more critical approach to the Scriptures and life in general. The second qualification to the rule that specifically religious involvement makes little difference to political attitudes is found among Secondary Protestants. The minority feeling that total belief in the Bible is 'not very important' are well below the Secondary mean for violence approval. There are, however, only ten per cent of Protostants Secondary boys in this belief grouping. Nevertheless they are 17 percentage points below the mean for violence approval which suggests that there may be connections between more modest views of the Bible and peaceful politics.

Believing all that the Bible teaches does sometimes involve facing a very wrathful God.

- - -When one considers the least likely measure of specifically religious involvement, strength of religious identification, one is confronted by large differences between those who confess themselves to be 'strong' and 'average' Protestants or Catholics. This further confirms the thesis that as one moves away from sepcifically religious phenomena to those that can be interpreted differently - as community identification - their importance increases for politics. Here 86 per cent of strong Protestants in Secondary schools approve violence to 60 per cent of the 'average' co-religionists. And 70 per cent of !strong! secondary school Catholics approve fighting for a United Ireland to only 54 per cent of their more 'ordinary' brethren. Thus, being a 'strong' religionist in discord between religious communities does not increase one's respect for 'law and order' but makes one unafraid of 'illegalities' in order to attain political goals. ه وري کې د

The more negative aspects of religious involvement, such as the absence of friends of a particular type because of religion, are much better indicators of affect and opposition than positive measures, such as church attendance. Although the presence or absence of friends in the other religion makes little difference to how younger Protestants feel about government there are important differences to be noted elsewhere. Catholics in primary and secondary schools, without Protestant friends are much more negative to government; Protestant

~ \

secondary schoolboys lacking Catholic friendship are much more violent in political outlook as are Catholics in both school ages who do not experience friendship across religious lines. Total lack of friends in the other religion probably makes it more likely that boys will believe the wildest rumours they hear about Catholics and Protestants. Instruction as to what Catholics and Protestants are really like may help to bridge the gap, but only actual experience across the divide will convince a boy that many of his fears were groundless. It may be suggested however, that for many, such an experience will only confirm one's worst suspicions and make attitudes to the other religion even harder than before.

Whilst believing that all the members of the other. religion are determined to destroy one's own religious community and/or faith does not make boys much more negative to government it certainly gives them a more bloodthirsty view of politics. In primary and secondary schools of both religions those imagining themselves to face a totally hostile religious community are, as one would expect, more committed to forwarding their own political goals through physical force methods. In this way rebellion is justified as means of preserving life, property and liberty. And now we are not talking about a small minority, but about half of the entire sample. Here one encounters some of the most frightening statistics: violence in politics ... approved by 87 per cent of Protestant Secondary pupils; 82 per . cent of Catholic Primary boys; 73 per cent of Catholic secondary boys; and 69 per cent of Protestants in Primary schools. If getting to know boys across religious lines reduces violent

tendencies in politics it may be because the myth of 'total hostility' is wholly or partially removed. One must also bear in mind that there is the other half of boys in all school types who do not believe the 'total hostility' myth and that half of such boys also believe in political violence. It thus cannot be argued that feeling <u>all</u> the 'others' are against 'us' is the cause of violence approval. But it may be put with some force that it is of importance in increasing the likelihood that boys will accept violence as part of their lives and that any effort to remove the myth will probably make constitutional methods of opposition more generally acceptable.

Since the vast majority of Catholic Secondary schoolboys believe that discrimination is practised against people like them, they are like most other Catholic boys in attitudes to discord. Only the minority who are uncertain about discrimination are both more positive to government and less violent in politics than the majority. Protestants, however, who sense they are discriminated against, are less like the majority of their co-religionists, and record more approval of violence in politics.

When negative and positive aspects of involvement in religion and/or religious communities are compared, it is the negative aspects that tell us much more about political attitudes. This is an indication that religious wars in Ulster are more 'against' the 'others' than for the sake of a particular faith. For instance, how often a person attends church is a poor

· - .

indicator of political views, whilst how he feels about the intentions of the 'others' divides boys within religions to a great extent. Again, how seriously one takes the teaching of the Church or the Bible tells us much less about a person's attitudes to disorders than does knowing that he has no friends in the other religion. Strength of involvement in religion, which could be interpreted as either doctrinal commitment or community feeling, is the only positive measure used which indicates more clearly which political attitudes a boy may have. Thus, as the Bishop of Connor maintained, '... the strife was due to a war of religion, but not one of dogma and belief.<sup>56</sup> Catholic doctrines may be more difficult for a Protestant to accept because they are believed by Catholics rather than on account of their strangeness to a Protestant. Similarly, a Catholic may find it harder to accept the legitimacy of Protestant beliefs simply because they are believed by Protestants. Thus, ecumenism in Ulster is a difficult exercise because religious communities have political, economic and social differences. If a religion is despised because of the people who hold it, there seems little point in preaching across major religious divides until the people can begin to respect the legitimacy of each other's aims. And that day seems far distant when ultimate political goals cancel each other out.

and the second second

2 <sup>(</sup> )

· ,

Footnotes: Chapter VII

- 1. Hess and Torney, op.cit., (Chapter I: fn.3) p.121
- 2. R. LoVine, "Political Socialization and Cultural Change", in Old Societies and New States, Geertz, E., ed.
- 3. Hess and Torney, op.cit., pp.30-37
- 4. Edwards O.D. et al., <u>Celtic Nationalism</u>, (Routledge and Kegan Paul, 1968)
- 5. Bernadette Devlin, Price of Hy Soul, (London: Pan, 1969) ch.II
- 6. Joan Lingard, The Twolfth Day of July, (Hamish Hamilton: London) 1970, pp.940
- 7. Alf McCreary, "Portraits of Ulstermen: Two-Gerry Fitt", Belfast Telegraph, October 11th, 1972.
- 8. Richard Rose, <u>Governing Without Consensus</u>, <u>op.cit.</u>, (Chapter I: fn.19) p.214
- 9. ibid., p.214
- 10. ibid., p.214
- 11. Glock, C.Y., and Stark R., <u>Religion and Tension in Society</u>, (Rand McNally and Company: Chicago, 1965) chapter I
- 12. See Gerhard Lenski, <u>The Religious Factor</u>, (New York: Anchor, 1963); Glock and Stark, <u>ibid</u>., David Martin, <u>A Sociology of English Religion</u> (London: Heinemann, 1967) and Michael Argyle, <u>Religious Behaviour</u>, (London: Routledge, 1958)
- 13. Gerhard Lenski, ibid., p.173
- 14. David Butler and Donald Stokes, <u>Political Change in</u> Britain, (Macmillan: London, 1969) p.134
- 15. <u>Religion in Britain and Northern Ireland</u>, (Independent Television Authority, 1970)
- 16. Louis Gardiner, <u>Resurgence of the Majority</u>, (Ulster Vanguard Publications, 1971) p.6
- 17. Fortnight, 9th July 1971
- 18. <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, 18th October 1971, "War of Religion -Not belief - Bishop."
- 19. Easton and Dennis, op.cit., (Chapter I: fn.3)
- 20. <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, 22nd September 1972, "Prepare for the new 'generation of bigots'."

- 21. P.A.C.E., October, 1971, p.23
- 22. Robert Harbinson, No Surrender, (Faber, 1960) p.123
- 23. Price of My Soul., op.cit., p.39
- 24. Almond and Varba, <u>Civic Culture</u>, op.cet., (chapter I: fn.9) p.102
- 25. John Greer, <u>A Questioning Generation</u>, (A Report on Sixth Form Religion in Northern Ireland, prepared for the Northern Ireland Committee of the Church of Ireland Board of Education, 1972)
- 26. See <u>A Questioning Generation</u>, <u>ibid</u>., and <u>Governing</u> <u>Without Consensus</u>, <u>op.cit</u>., <u>p.264</u>
- 27. David Bleakley, Young Ulster and Religion in the Sixties, 1964 (Published Privately)
- 28. The Gown, 20th November 1959
- 29. A Questioning Generation, op.cit., ch.2
- 30. <u>Governing Without Consensus</u>, op.cit., p.264
- 31. <u>ibid.</u>, p.261
- 32. See Cox, Edwin, Sixth Form Religion, (S.C.M. 1967) and A Questioning Generation, op.cit.
- 33. Lenski, G., The Religious Factor, op.cit.
- 34. Governing Without Consensus, op.: oit. pp.261-62
- 35. See <u>Religion in Britain and Northern Ireland</u>, op.cit., and <u>A Questioning Generation</u>, op.cit.
- 36. Governing Without Consensus, op.cit., p.495, Question 38a
- 37. Old Societies and New States, op.cit., p.59
- 38. The Epistle of St. Paul to the Romans, Chapter XIII:1
- 39. P.A.C.E. January 1972, p.2
- 40. The Education of Catholic Americans, A.M. Greely and P.H. Rossi, (Aldina Publishing Company: Chicago, 1966) pp.153-54
- 41. <u>Religion in Britain and Northern Ireland</u>, <u>op.cit.</u>, Appendix C.
- 42. <u>Governing Without Consensus</u>, op.cit., pp.477-78, Questions 4 and 5c
- 43. See Barrit and Carter, <u>op.cit.</u>, ( chapter II.

- 44. ibid., p.25
- 45. Belfast Telegraph, 25th October, 1972, "Craig and Taylor Warn Again...."
- 46. Morris Fraser, <u>Children in Conflict</u>, (Seeker and Warburg, 1973) p.113-114
- 47. Governing Without Consensus, op. cot., p. 479, Question 6c
- 48. Argyle, M., Religious Behaviour, op.cit., p.159
- 49. S.M. Lipset, <u>Political Man</u>, (Garden City, N.Y.: Doubleday and Co., 1963) p.72
- 50. D.E. Smith, Religion and Political Development, (Little, Brown: Boston, 1970) chapter VI
- 51. Vallier, I., "Religious Elites: Differentiations and Developments in Roman Catholicism," in S.M. Lipset and A. Solari, eds., Elites in Latin America, (New York: Oxford University Press, 1967)
- 52. John Whyte, Church and State in Modern Ireland, 1923-1970 Gill and MacMillan, 1971) p. 376
- 53. National Opinion Poll Survey of Youth Attitudes in Northern Ireland 1968
- 54. Fahy, P.A., Roman Catholic Priests and Local Politics in Northern Ireland, (Glasgow: University of Stratholyde M.Sc. dissertation 1969)
- 55. Governing Without Consensus, op. ctt., p. 347
- 56. <u>Belfast Telegraph</u>, 18th October 1971, "War of Religion -Not Belief - Bishop."